

THE  
HISTORY  
Of the RENOWNED  
DON QUIXOTE  
De la MANCHA.

Written in SPANISH by  
Miguel de Cervantes Saavedra.

TRANSLATED by Several HANDS:

And PUBLISHED by  
The late Mr. MOTTEUX.

---

Adorn'd with New SCULPTURES.

---

The EIGHTH EDITION,

Revis'd a-new; and Corrected, Rectify'd and Fill'd up,  
in Numberless Places, from the best *Spanish* Edition;

By Mr. O Z E L L :

Who, at the Bottom of the Pages, has likewise added  
(after some few Corrections of his own, as will appear)  
Explanatory Notes, from JARVIS, OUDIN, SOBRINO,  
PINEDA, GREGORIO, and the ROYAL ACADEMY  
DICTIONARY of MADRID.

---

V O L. II.

---

L O N D O N :

Printed for W. INNYS, R. WARE, S. BIRT, J. and P.  
KNAPTON, T. LONGMAN, D. BROWNE, C. HITCH,  
J. HODGES, A. MILLAR, J. DAVIDSON, J. HAW-  
KINS, J. and R. TONSON, J. WARD, and M. COOPER.

MDCCXLIX.



HISTOIRY

DON QUIXOTE  
DE LA MANCHA

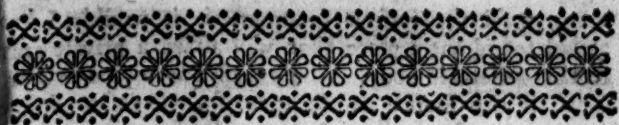
Miguel de Cervantes Saavedra

Translated by George H. Rieu



When a person is in the habit of reading, he is not only informed of the events of the world, but he is also enabled to judge of the character of the men who are engaged in them. This is the object of the present work, which is intended to give a true and impartial account of the life and actions of the most famous of the Spanish heroes, Don Quixote de la Mancha.

LONDON:  
Printed by W. B. Whittaker, at the University Press, 1805.



THE  
Life *and* Atchievements

Of the Renowned

Don QUIXOTE de la MANCHA.

---

PART I. BOOK IV.

---

CHAP. I.

*The pleasant new adventure the Curate and Barber met  
with in Sierra Morena, or Black Mountain.*

**M**OST fortunate and happy was the age that usher'd into the world that most daring knight Don Quixote de la Mancha! for from his generous resolution to revive and restore the ancient order of knight-errantry, that was not only wholly neglected, but almost lost and abolish'd, our age, barren in itself of pleasant recreations, derives the pleasure it reaps from his true history, and the various tales and episodes thereof, in some respects, no less pleasing, artful and authentic, than the history itself. We told you that as the curate was preparing to give Cardenio some seasonable consolation, he was prevented by a voice, whose doleful complaints reach'd his ears, O hea-

VOL. II,

B

vens,

vens, cry'd the unseen mourner, is it possible I have at last found out a place that will afford a private grave to this miserable body, whose load I so repine to bear? Yes, if the silence and solitude of these desarts do not deceive me, here I may die conceal'd from human eyes. Ah me! ah wretched creature! to what extremity has affliction driven me, reduc'd to think these hideous woods and rocks a kind retreat! 'tis true indeed, I may here freely complain to heaven, and beg for that relief which I might ask in vain of false mankind: for 'tis vain, I find, to seek below either counsel, ease, or remedy. The curate and his company, who heard all this distinctly, justly conjectur'd they were very near the person who thus express'd his grief, and therefore rose to find him out. They had not gone about twenty paces, before they spy'd a youth in a country habit, sitting at the foot of a rock behind an ash-tree; but they could not well see his face, being bow'd almost upon his knees, as he sat washing his feet in a rivulet that glided by. They approach'd him so softly that he did not perceive them: and, as he was gently padding in the clear water, they had time to discern that his legs were as white as alabaster, and so taper, so curiously proportion'd, and so fine, that nothing of the kind could appear more beautiful. Our observers were amaz'd at this discovery, rightly imagining that such tender feet were not us'd to trudge in rugged ways, or measure the steps of oxen at the plough, the common employments of people in such apparel; and therefore the curate, who went before the rest, whose curiosity was heighten'd by this sight, beckon'd to 'em to step aside, and hide themselves behind some of the little rocks that were by; which they did, and from thence making a stricter observation, they found he had on a grey double-skirted jerkin, girt tight about his body with a linen towel. He wore also a pair of breeches, and gamashes of grey cloth, and a grey huntsman's cap on his head. His gamashes were now pull'd up to the middle of his leg, which really seem'd to be of snowy alabaster. Having made an end of washing his beau-

I have  
ate grave  
to bear  
s do not  
an eyes,  
xtremity  
se hide-  
indeed,  
for that  
ankind:  
el, ease,  
o heard  
ere very  
d there-  
e about  
country  
sh-tree;  
almost  
ulet that  
t he did  
dling in  
his legs  
curiously  
d could  
amaz'd at  
der feet  
measure  
employ-  
the cu-  
ity was  
ep aside,  
cks that  
e mak-  
a grey  
with a  
es, and  
cap on  
to the  
snowy  
s beau-  
teous



*Dorothea drest like a Swain.  
(found by the Curate & Cardenio).*



teous feet, he immediately wiped them with a handkerchief, which he pull'd out from under his cap ; and with that, looking up, he discover'd so charming a face, so accomplish'd a beauty, that Cardenio could not forbear saying to the curate, that since this was not Lucinda, 'twas certainly no human form, but an angel. And then the youth taking off his cap, and shaking his head, an incredible quantity of lovely hair flow'd down upon his shoulders; and not only cover'd 'em, but almost all his body ; by which they were now convinc'd, that what they at first took to be a country lad, was a young woman, and one of the most beautiful creatures in the world. Cardenio was not less surpriz'd than the other two, and once more declar'd, that no face could vie with hers but Lucinda's. To part her dishevel'd tresses, she only us'd her slender fingers, and at the same time discover'd so fine a pair of arms, and hands, so white and lovely, that our three admiring gazers grew more impatient to know who she was, and mov'd forwards to accost her. At the noise they made, the pretty creature started ; and peeping thro' her hair, which she hastily remov'd from before her eyes with both her hands, she no sooner saw three men coming towards her, but in a mighty fright she snatch'd up a little bundle that lay by her, and fled as fast as she could, without so much as staying to put on her shoes, or do up her hair. But alas ! scarce had she gone six steps, when her tender feet not being able to endure the rough encounter of the stones, the poor affrighted fair fell on the hard ground ; so that those from whom she fled, hast'ning to help her ; stay, madam, cry'd the curate, whoever you be, you have no reason to fly ; we have no other design but to do you service. With that, approaching her, he took her by the hand, and perceiving she was so disorder'd with fear and confusion, that she could not answer a word ; he strove to compose her mind with kind expressions. Be not afraid, madam, continu'd he ; tho' your hair has betray'd what your disguise conceal'd from us, we are but the more dispos'd to assist you, and do you all manner of service. Then pray tell us how



we may best do it. I imagine it was no slight occasion that made you obscure your singular beauty under so unworthy a disguise, and venture into this desert, where it was the greatest chance in the world that e'er you met with us. However, we hope it is not impossible to find a remedy for your misfortunes ; since there are none which reason and time will not at last surmount : and therefore, madam, if you have not absolutely renounc'd all human comfort, I beseech you tell us the cause of your affliction, and assure yourself we do not ask this out of meer curiosity, but a real desire to serve you, and either to condole or assuage your grief.

While the curate endeavour'd thus to remove the trembling fair-one's apprehension, she stood amaz'd, staring, without speaking a word, sometimes upon one, sometimes upon another, like one scarce well awake, or like an ignorant clown who happens to see some strange sight. But at last the curate having given her time to recollect herself, and persisting in his earnest and civil intreaties, she fetch'd a deep sigh, and then unclosing her lips, broke silence in this manner. Since this desert has not been able to conceal me, and my hair has betray'd me, it would be needless now for me to dissemble with you ; and since you desire to hear the story of my misfortunes, I cannot in civility deny you, after all the obliging offers you have been pleas'd to make me : but yet, gentlemen, I am much afraid, what I have to say will but make you sad, and afford you little satisfaction ; for you will find my disasters are not to be remedy'd. There is one thing that troubles me yet more ; it shocks my nature to think I must be forc'd to reveal to you some secrets which I had design'd to have bury'd in my grave : but yet considering the garb and the place you have found me in, I fancy it will be better for me to tell you all, than to give occasion to doubt of my past conduct and my present designs by an affected reservedness. The disguis'd lady having made this answer, with a modest blush and extraordinary discretion, the curate and his company, who now admir'd her the more for her sense, renew'd their kind offers and pressing solicitations ;  
and

and then they modestly let her retire a moment to some distance to put herself in decent order. Which done, she return'd, and being all seated on the grass, after she had us'd no small violence to smother her tears, she thus began her story.

I was born in a certain town of Andaluzia, from which a duke takes his title, that makes him a grandee of Spain. This duke has two sons, the eldest heir to his estate, and as it may be presum'd, of his virtues; the youngest heir to nothing I know of, but the treachery of Vellido \*, and the deceitfulness of Galalon †. My father, who is one of his vassals, is but of low degree; but so very rich, that had fortune equall'd his birth to his estate, he could have wanted nothing more, and I, perhaps, had never been so miserable; for I verily believe, my not being of noble blood is the chief occasion of my ruin. True it is my parents are not so meanly born, as to have any cause to be ashamed of their original, nor so high as to alter the opinion I have that my misfortune proceeds from their lowness. 'Tis true, they have been farmers from father to son, yet without any mixture or stain of infamous or scandalous blood. They are old rusty ‡ Christians (as we call our true primitive Spaniards) and the antiquity of their family, together with their large possessions, and the port they live in, raises 'em much above their profession, and has by little and little almost universally gain'd them the name of gentlemen, setting 'em, in a manner, equal to many such in the world's esteem. As I am their only child, they ever lov'd me with all the tenderness of indulgent parents; and their great affection made them

---

\* Who murder'd Sancho king of Castile, as he was easing himself, at the siege of Zamora.

† Who betray'd the French army at Roncevaux.

‡ Ranciosos in the original: a metaphor taken from rusty bacon, yellow and mouldy, as it were with age. 'Tis a farmer's daughter speaks this.

esteem themselves happier in their daughter, than in the peaceable enjoyment of their large estate. Now as it was my good fortune to be possess'd of their love, they were pleas'd to trust me with their substance. The whole house and estate was left to my management, and I took such care not to abuse the trust repos'd in me, that I never forfeited their good opinion of my discretion. The time I had to spare from the care of the family, I commonly employ'd in the usual exercises of young women, sometimes making bone-lace, or at my needle, and now and then reading some good book, or playing on the harp; having experienc'd that musick was very proper to recreate the wearied mind: and this was the innocent Life I led. I have not descended to these particulars out of vain ostentation, but meerly that when I come to relate my misfortunes, you may observe I do not owe them to my ill conduct. While I thus liv'd the life of a nun, unseen, as I thought, by any body but our own family, and never leaving the house but to go to church, which was commonly betimes in the morning, and always with my mother, and so close hid in a veil that I could scarce find my way; notwithstanding all the care that was taken to keep me from being seen, 'twas unhappily rumour'd abroad that I was handsome, and to my eternal disquiet, love intruded into my peaceful retirement. Don Ferdinand, second son to the duke I have mention'd, had a sight of me —— Scarce had Cardenio heard Don Ferdinand nam'd, but he chang'd colour, and betray'd such a disorder of body and mind, that the curate and the barber were afraid he would have fallen into one of those frantick fits that often us'd to take him; but by good fortune it did not come to that, and he only set himself to look stedfastly on the country maid, presently guessing who she was; while she continu'd her story, without taking any notice of the alteration of his countenance.

No sooner had he seen me, said she, but, as he since told me, he felt in his breast that violent passion of which he afterwards gave me so many proofs. But not to tire you with a needless relation of every particular,

I will pass over all the means he us'd to inform me of his love: He purchas'd the good-will of all our servants with private gifts: He made my father a thousand kind offers of service: Every day seem'd a day of rejoicing in our neighbourhood, every evening usher'd in some serenade, and the continual musick was even a disturbance in the night. He got an infinite number of love-letters transmitted to me, I don't know by what means, every one full of the tenderest expressions, promises, vows and protestations. But all this assiduous courtship was so far from inclining my heart to a kind return, that it rather mov'd my indignation; insomuch that I look'd upon Don Ferdinand as my greatest enemy, and one wholly bent on my ruin: Not but that I was well enough pleas'd with his gallantry, and took a secret delight in seeing myself thus courted by a person of his quality. Such demonstrations of love are never altogether displeasing to women, and the most disdainful, in spite of all their coyness, reserve a little complaisance in their hearts for their admirers. But the disproportion between our qualities was too great to suffer me to entertain any reasonable hopes, and his gallantry too singular not to offend me. Besides, my father, who soon made a right construction of Don Ferdinand's pretensions, with his prudent admonitions concur'd with the sense I ever had of my honour, and banish'd from my mind all favourable thoughts of his addresses. However, like a kind parent, perceiving I was somewhat uneasy, and imagining the flattering prospect of so advantageous a match might still amuse me, he told me one day he repos'd the utmost trust in my virtue, esteeming it the strongest obstacle he could oppose to Don Ferdinand's dishonourable designs; yet if I would marry, to rid me at once of his unjust pursuit, and prevent the ruin of my reputation, I shou'd have liberty to make my own choice of a suitable match, either in our own town or the neighbourhood; and that he would do for me whatever cou'd be expected from a loving father. I humbly thank'd him for his kindness, and told him, that as I had never yet had any thoughts of marriage, I  
wou'd

wou'd try to rid myself of Don Ferdinand some other way. Accordingly I resolv'd to shun him with so much precaution, that he shou'd never have the opportunity to speak to me: But all my reservedness, far from tiring out his passion, strengthened it the more. In short, Don Ferdinand, either hearing or suspecting I was to be marry'd, thought of a contrivance to cross a design that was likely to cut off all his hopes. One night therefore, when I was in my chamber, no body with me but my maid, and the door double lock'd and bolted, that I might be secur'd against the attempts of Don Ferdinand, whom I took to be a man who wou'd stick at nothing to compass his designs, unexpectedly I saw him just before me; which amazing sight so surpriz'd me, that I was struck dumb, and fainted away with fear. So I had not power to call for help, nor do I believe he wou'd have given me time to have done it, had I attempted it; for he presently ran to me, and taking me in his arms, while I was sinking with the fright, he spoke to me in such endearing terms, and with so much address, and pretended tenderness and sincerity, that I did not dare to cry out when I came to myself. His sighs, and yet more his tears, seem'd to me undeniable proofs of his vow'd integrity; and I being but young, bred up in perpetual retirement, from all society but my virtuous parents, and unexperienc'd in those affairs, in which even the most knowing are apt to be mistaken, my reluctancy abated by degrees, and I began to have some sense of compassion, yet none but what was consistent with my honour. However, when I was pretty well recover'd from my first fright, my former resolution return'd; and then, with more courage than I thought I shou'd have had, My Lord, said I, if at the same time that you offer me your love, and give me such strange demonstrations of it, you wou'd also offer me poison, and leave to take my choice, I wou'd soon resolve which to accept, and convince you by my death, that my honour is dearer to me than my Life. To be plain, I can have no good opinion of a presumption that endangers my reputation; and unless you leave me this moment,



moment, I will so effectually make you know how much you are mistaken in me, that if you have but the least sense of honour left, you'll repent the driving me to that extremity as long as you live. I was born your vassal, but not your slave; nor does the greatness of your birth privilege you to injure your inferiors, or exact from me more than the duties which all vassals pay; that excepted, I do not esteem my self less in my low degree, than you have reason to value your self in your high rank. Do not then think to awe or dazzle me with your grandeur, or fright or force me into a base compliance; I am not to be tempted with titles, pomp, and equipage; nor weak enough to be moved with vain sights and false tears. In short, my will is wholly at my father's disposal, and I will not entertain any man as a lover, but by his appointment. Therefore, my lord, if you wou'd have me believe you so sincerely love me, give over your vain and injurious pursuit; suffer me peaceably to enjoy the benefits of life in the free possession of my honour, the loss of which for ever imbitters all life's sweets; and since you cannot be my husband, do not expect from me that affection which I cannot pay to any other. What do you mean, charming Dorothea? cry'd the perfidious lord. Cannot I be yours by the sacred title of husband? Who can hinder me, if you'll but consent to bless me on those terms? Too happy if I have no other obstacle to surmount. I am yours this moment, beautiful Dorothea: see, I give you here my hand to be yours, and yours alone for ever: and let all-seeing heaven, and this holy image here on your oratory, witness the solemn truth.

Cardenio hearing her call herself Dorothea, was now fully satisfied she was the person whom he took her to be: however, he would not interrupt her story, being impatient to hear the end of it; only addressing himself to her, is then your name Dorothea, madam, cry'd he? I have heard of a lady of that name, whose misfortunes have a great resemblance with yours. But proceed I beseech you, and when you have done, I may perhaps surprize you with an account of things that have some affinity



finity with those you relate. With that Dorothea made a stop to study Cardenio's face, and his wretched attire; and then earnestly desir'd him, if he knew any thing that concern'd her, to let her know it presently; telling him, that all the happiness she had left, was only the courage to bear with resignation all the disasters that might befall her; well assur'd that no new one could make her more unfortunate than she was already. Truly, madam, reply'd Cardenio, I would tell you all I know, were I sure my conjectures were true; but so far as I may judge by what I have heard hitherto, I don't think it material to tell it you yet, and I shall find a more proper time to do it. Then Dorothea resuming her discourse, Don Ferdinand, said she, repeated his vows of marriage in the most serious manner; and giving me his hand, plighted me his faith in the most binding words, and sacred oaths. But before I would let him engage himself thus, I advis'd him to have a care how he suffer'd an unruly passion to get the ascendant over his reason, to the endangering of his future happiness. My Lord, said I, let not a few transitory and imaginary charms, which cou'd never excuse such an excess of love, hurry you to your ruin: spare your noble father the shame and displeasure of seeing you marry'd to a person so much below your birth; and do not rashly do a thing of which you may repent, and that may make my life uncomfortable. I added several other reasons to dissuade him from that hasty match, but they were all unregarded. Don Ferdinand, deaf to every thing but to his desires, engag'd and bound himself like an inconsiderate lover, who sacrifices all things to his passion, or rather like a cheat, who does not value a breach of vows. When I saw him so obstinate, I began to consider what I had to do. I am not the first, thought I to my self, whom marriage has rais'd to unhop'd for greatness, and whose beauty alone has supply'd her want of birth and merit: thousands besides Don Ferdinand have married merely for love, without any regard to the inequality of wealth or birth. The opportunity was fair and tempting; and as fortune is not al-

ways

ways favourable, I thought it an imprudent thing to let it slip. Thought I to myself, while she kindly offers me a husband who assures me of an inviolable affection, why should I by an unreasonable denial make myself an enemy of such a friend? and then there was one thing more; I apprehended it wou'd be dangerous to drive him to despair by an ill-tim'd refusal: nor could I think myself safe alone in his hands, lest he should resolve to satisfy his passion by force; which done, he might think himself free from performing a promise which I would not accept, and then I should be left without either honour or an excuse; for it would be no easy matter to persuade my father, and the censorious world, that this nobleman was admitted into my chamber without my consent. All these reasons, which in a moment offer'd themselves in my mind, shook my former resolves; and Don Ferdinand's sighs, his tears, his vows, and the sacred witnesses by which he swore, together with his graceful mien, his extraordinary accomplishments, and the love which I fancy'd I read in all his actions, help'd to bring on my ruin, as I believe they would have prevail'd with any one's heart as free and as well guarded as was mine. Then I call'd my maid to be witness of Don Ferdinand's vows and sacred engagements, which he reiterated to me, and confirm'd with new oaths and solemn promises; he call'd again on heaven, and on many particular saints, to witness his sincerity, wishing a thousand curses might fall on him, in case he ever violated his word. Again he sigh'd, again he wept, and mov'd me more and more with fresh marks of affection; and the treacherous maid having left the room, the perfidious lord preying on my weakness, compleated his pernicious design. The day which succeeded that unhappy night, had not yet begun to dawn, when Don Ferdinand, impatient to be gone, made all the haste he cou'd to leave me. For after the gratifications of brutish appetite are past, the greatest pleasure then is, to get rid of that which entertain'd it. He told me, though not with so great a shew of affection, nor so warmly as before, that

that I might rely on his honour and on the sincerity of his vows and promises ; and as a further pledge, he pull'd off a ring of great value from his finger, and put it upon mine. In short, he went away ; and my maid, who, as she confess'd it to me, had let him in privately, took care to let him out into the street by break of day, while I remain'd so strangely concern'd at the thoughts of all these passages, that I cannot well tell whether I was sorry or pleased. I was in a manner quite distracted, and either forgot, or had not the heart to chide my maid for her treachery, not knowing yet whether she had done me good or harm. I had told Don Ferdinand before he went, that seeing I was now his own, he might make use of the same means to come again to see me, till he found it convenient to do me the honour of owning me publicly for his wife ; but he came to me only the next night, and from that time I never cou'd see him more, neither at church nor in the street, though for a whole month together I tir'd myself endeavouring to find him out ; being credibly inform'd he was still near us, and went a hunting almost every day, I leave you to think with what uneasiness I pass'd those tedious hours, when I perceiv'd his neglect, and had reason to suspect his breach of faith. So unexpected a slight which I looked upon as the most sensible affliction that cou'd befall me, had like to have quite overwhelm'd me. Then it was that I found my maid had betray'd me ; I broke out into severe complaints of her presumption, which I had smother'd till that time. I exclaim'd against Don Ferdinand, and exhausted my sighs and tears without asswaging my sorrow. What was worse, I found my father oblig'd to set a guard upon my very looks, for fear my father and mother shou'd inquire into the cause of my discontent, and so occasion my being guilty of shameful lies and evasions to conceal my more shameful disaster. But at last I perceiv'd 'twas in vain to dissemble, and I gave a loose to my resentments ; for I could no longer hold when I heard that Don Ferdinand was marry'd in a neighbouring town to a young lady of rich and noble parentage.

parentage, and extremely handsome, whose name is Lucinda. Cardenio hearing Lucinda nam'd, felt his former disorder, but by good fortune it was not so violent as it us'd to be; and he only shrug'd up his shoulders, bit his lips, knit his brows, and a little while after let fall a shower of tears, which did not hinder Dorothea from going on. This news, continued she, instead of freezing up my blood with grief and astonishment, fill'd me with burning rage. Despair took possession of my soul, and in the transports of my fury I was ready to run raving thro' the streets, and publish Don Ferdinand's disloyalty, tho' at the expence of my reputation. I don't know whether a remainder of reason stopp'd these violent motions, but I found my self mightily eas'd as soon as I had pitch'd upon a design that presently came into my head. I discover'd the cause of my grief to a young country fellow that serv'd my father, and desir'd him to lend me a suit of man's apparel, and to go along with me to the town where I heard Don Ferdinand was. The fellow us'd the best arguments he had to hinder me from so strange an undertaking; but finding I was inflexible in my resolution, he assur'd me he was ready to serve me. Thereupon I put on this habit which you see, and taking with me some of my own cloaths, together with some gold and jewels, not knowing but I might have occasion for 'em, I set out that very night, attended with that servant and many anxious thoughts, without so much as acquainting my maid with my design. To tell you the truth, I did not well know my self what I went about; for as there could be no remedy, Don Ferdinand being actually marry'd to another, what could I hope to get by seeing him, unless it were the wretched satisfaction of upbraiding him with his infidelity? in two days and a half we got to the town; where the first thing I did was to enquire where Lucinda's father liv'd. That single question produc'd a great deal more than I desir'd to hear; for the first man I address'd my self to, shew'd me the house, and inform'd me of all that happen'd at Lucinda's marriage; which it seems was

grown so publick, that it was the talk of the whole town. He told me how Lucinda swoon'd away as soon as she had answer'd the priest, that she was contented to be Don Ferdinand's wife ; and how after he had approach'd to open her stays to give her more room to breathe, he found a letter under her own hand, wherein she declar'd she could not be Don Ferdinand's wife, because she was already contracted to a considerable gentleman of the same town, whose name was Cardenio ; and that she had only consented to that marriage in obedience to her father. He also told me, that it appear'd by the letter, and a dagger which was found about her, that she design'd to have kill'd herself after the ceremony was over ; and that Don Ferdinand, enrag'd to see himself thus deluded, would have kill'd her himself with that very dagger, had he not been prevented by those that were present. He added, 'twas reported, that upon this Don Ferdinand immediately left the town ; and that Lucinda did not come to herself till the next day ; and then she told her parents, that she was really Cardenio's wife, and that he and she were contracted before she had seen Don Ferdinand. I heard also that this Cardenio was present at the wedding ; and that as soon as he saw her married, which was a thing he never could have believed, he left the town in despair, leaving a letter behind him full of complaints of Lucinda's breach of faith, and to inform his friends of his resolution to go to some place where they should never hear of him more. This was all the discourse of the town when I came thither, and soon after we heard that Lucinda also was missing, and that her father and mother were grieving almost to distraction, not being able to learn what was become of her. For my part, this news revived my hopes, having reason to be pleas'd to find Don Ferdinand unmarried, I flatter'd my self that heaven had perhaps prevented this second marriage to make him sensible of his violating the first, and to touch his conscience, in order to his acquitting himself of his duty like a christian, and a man of honour. So I strove to beguile my cares with an imaginary prospect



of a far distant change of fortune, amusing my self with vain hopes that I might not sink under the load of affliction, but prolong life; tho' this was only a lengthening of my sorrows, since I have now but the more reason to wish to be eas'd of the trouble of living. But while I staid in that town, not knowing what I had best to do, seeing I cou'd not find Don Ferdinand, I heard a crier publickly describe my person, my cloaths, and my age, in the open street, promising a considerable reward to any that cou'd bring tidings of Dorothea. I also heard that 'twas rumour'd I was run away from my father's house with the servant who attended me; and that report touch'd my soul as much as Don Ferdinand's perfidiousness; for thus I saw my reputation wholly lost, and that too for a subject so base and so unworthy of my nobler thoughts. Thereupon I made all the haste I could to get out of the town with my servant, who even then, to my thinking, began by some tokens to betray a faltering in the fidelity he had promised me. Dreading to be discovered, we reach'd the most desert part of this mountain that night: But, as 'tis a common saying, that misfortunes seldom come alone, and the end of one disaster is often the beginning of a greater, I was no sooner got to that place, where I thought my self safe, but the fellow, whom I had hitherto found to be modest and respectful, now rather incited by his own villainy, than my beauty, and the opportunity which that place offer'd, than by any thing else, had the impudence to talk to me of love; and seeing I answer'd him with anger and contempt, he would no longer lose time in clownish courtship, but resolv'd to use violence to compass his wicked design. But just heaven, which seldom or never fails to succour just designs, so assisted mine, and his brutish passion so blinded him, that not perceiving he was on the brink of a steep rock, I easily push'd him down; and then without looking to see what was become him, and with more nimbleness than cou'd be expected from my surprize and weariness, I ran into the thickest part of the desert to secure my self. The next day I met a country-



man, who took me to his house amidst these mountains, and employed me ever since in the nature of his shepherd. There I have continu'd some months, making it my business to be as much as possible in the fields, the better to conceal my sex: but notwithstanding all my care and industry, he at last discover'd I was a woman; which made him presume to importune me with beastly offers: so that fortune not favouring me with the former opportunity of freeing my self, I left his house, and chose to seek a sanctuary among these woods and rocks, there with sighs and tears to beseech heaven to pity me, and to direct and relieve me in this forlorn condition; or at least to put an end to my miserable life, and bury in this desert the very memory of an unhappy creature, who, more thro' ill fortune than ill intent, has given the idle world occasion to be too busy with her fame.



## CHAP. II.

*An account of the beautiful Dorothea's discretion, with other pleasant passages.*

**T**HIS, gentlemen, continued Dorothea, is the true story of my tragical adventures; and now be you judges whether I had reason to make the complaint you overheard, and whether so unfortunate and hopeless a creature be in a condition to admit of comfort. I have only one favour to beg of you; be pleas'd to direct me to some place where I may pass the rest of my life secure from the search and inquiry of my parents; not but their former affection is a sufficient warrant for my kind reception, could the sense I have of the thoughts they must have of my past conduct permit me to return to 'em; but when I think they must believe me guilty, and can now have nothing but my bare word to assure them of my innocence, I can never resolve to stand their sight. Here Dorothea stopt, and the blushes that overspread her cheeks were certain signs of the discomposure

of her thoughts, and the unfeigned modesty of her soul. Those who had heard her story were deeply mov'd with compassion for her hard fate, and the curate would not delay any longer to give her some charitable comfort and advice. But scarce had he begun to speak, when Cardenio, addressing himself to her, interrupted him; how madam, said he, taking her by the hand, are you then the beautiful Dorothea, the only daughter of the rich Cleonardo? Dorothea was strangely surpriz'd to hear her father nam'd, and by one in so tatter'd a garb. And pray who are you, friend \*, said she to him, that know so well my father's name? for I think I did not mention it once throughout the whole relation of my afflictions. I am Cardenio, reply'd the other, that unfortunate person, whom Lucinda, as you told us, declar'd to be her husband: I am that miserable Cardenio, whom the perfidiousness of the man who has reduc'd you to this deplorable condition, has also brought to this wretched state, to rags, to nakedness, to despair, nay to madness itself, and all hardships and want of human comforts; only enjoying the privilege of reason by short intervals, to feel and bemoan my miseries the more. I am the man, fair Dorothea, who was the unhappy eyewitness of Don Ferdinand's unjust nuptials, and who heard my Lucinda give her consent to be his wife; that heartless wretch, who, unable to bear so strange a disappointment, lost in amazement and trouble, flung out of the house, without staying to know what would follow her trance, and what the paper that was taken out of her bosom would produce. I abandon'd myself to despair, and having left a letter with a person whom I charg'd to deliver it into Lucinda's own hands, I hasten'd to hide myself from the world in this desert, resolv'd to end there a life, which from that moment

---

\* Y quien fois vos, hermano, *i. e.* and pray who are you, brother? *It is the Spanish way of speaking. We say, friend; the French the same, Mon Amy.*

I had abhorr'd as my greatest enemy. But fortune has preserv'd me, I see, that I may venture it upon a better cause ; for from what you have told us now, which I have no reason to doubt, I am embolden'd to hope that providence may yet reserve us both to a better fate than we durst have expected ; heaven will restore you Don Ferdinand, who cannot be Lucinda's, and to me Lucinda, who cannot be Don Ferdinand's. For my part, tho' my interests were not link'd with yours, as they are, I have so deep a sense of your misfortunes, that I would expose myself to any dangers to see you righted by Don Ferdinand : and here, on the word of a gentleman, and a christian, I vow and promise not to forsake you 'till he has done you justice, and to oblige him to do it at the hazard of my life, should reason and generosity prove ineffectual to force him to be blest with you. Dorothea, ravish'd with joy, and not knowing how to express a due sense of Cardenio's obliging offers, would have thrown herself at his feet, had he not civilly hinder'd it. At the same time the curate discreetly speaking for 'em both, highly applauded Cardenio for his generous resolution, and comforted Dorothea. He also very heartily invited 'em to his house, where they might furnish themselves with necessaries, and consult together how to find out Don Ferdinand, and bring Dorothea home to her father ; which kind offer they thankfully accepted. Then the barber, who had been silent all this while, put in for a share, and handsomely assur'd them, he would be very ready to do 'em all the service that might lie in his power. After these civilities, he acquainted 'em with the design that had brought the curate and him to that place ; and gave 'em an account of Don Quixote's strange kind of madness, and of their staying there for his squire. Cardenio hearing him mentioned, remember'd something of the scuffle he had with them both, but only as if it had been a dream ; so that tho' he told the company of it, he could not let them know the occasion. By this time they heard some body call, and by the voice they knew it was Sancho Panza, who not finding 'em where he

had

had left 'em, tore his very lungs with hollowing, With that they all went to meet him ; which done, they ask'd him what was become of Don Quixote ? alas, answer'd Sancho, I left him yonder, in an ill plight : I found him in his shirt, lean, pale, and almost starv'd, sighing and whining for his lady Dulcinea. I told him, how that she'd have him come to her presently to Toboso, where she look'd for him out of hand ; yet for all this he would not budge a foot, but even told me he was resolv'd he would never set eyes on her sweet face again, till he had done some feats that might make him worthy of her goodness ; so that, added Sancho, if he leads this life any longer, I fear me my poor master is never like to be an emperor, as he is bound in honour to be, nay not so much as an archbishop, which is the least thing he can come off with ; therefore, good sir, see and get him away by all means I beseech you. The curate bid him be of good cheer, for they would take care to make him leave that place whether he would or not ; and then turning to Cardenio and Dorothea, he inform'd 'em of the design which he and the barber had laid in order to his cure, or at least to get him home to his house. Dorothea, whose mind was much eas'd with the prospect of better fortune, kindly undertook to act the distress'd lady herself, which she said she thought would become her better than the barber, having a dress very proper for that purpose ; besides she had read many books of chivalry, and knew how the distress'd ladies used to express themselves when they came to beg some knight-errant's assistance. This is obliging, madam, said the curate, and we want nothing more : so let's to work as fast as we can ; we may now hope to succeed, since you thus happily facilitate the design. Presently Dorothea took out of her bundle a petticoat of very rich stuff, and a gown of very fine green silk ; also a necklace, and several other jewels out of a box ; and with these in an instant she so adorn'd herself, and appear'd so beautiful and glorious, that they all stood in admiration that Don Ferdinand should be so injudicious to slight so accomplished a beauty. But he that admir'd her most

was

was Sancho Panza ; for he thought he had ne'er set eyes on so fine a creature, and perhaps he thought right : which made him earnestly ask the curate, who that fine dame was, and what wind had blown her thither among the woods and rocks ? who that fine lady Sancho ? answer'd the curate ; she's the only heiress in a direct line to the vast kingdom of Micomicon : mov'd by the fame of your master's great exploits, that spreads itself over all Guinea, she comes to seek him out, and beg a boon of him ; that is, to redress a wrong which a wicked giant has done her. Why that's well, quoth Sancho : a happy seeking and a happy finding. Now if my master be but so lucky as to right that wrong, by killing that son of a whore of a giant you tell me of, I'm a made man : yes he will kill him, that he will, if he can but come at him, and he ben't a hobgoblin ; for my master can do no good with hobgoblins. But Mr. Curate, an't please you, I have a favour to ask of you, I beseech you put my master out of conceit with all archbishopricks, for that's what I dread ; and therefore to rid me of my fears, put it into his head to clap up a match with this same princess ; for by that means 'twill be past his power to make himself archbishop, and he'll come to be emperor, and I a great man as sure as a gun. I have thought well of the matter, and I find it is not at all fitting he shou'd be an archbishop for my good ; for what should I get by it ? I an't fit for church preferment, I am a married man ; and now for me to go trouble my head with getting a licence to hold church-livings, 'twould be an endless piece of business : therefore 'twill be better for him to marry out of hand this same princess, whose name I can't tell, for I never heard it. They call her the princess Micomicona, said the curate ; for her kingdom being called Micomicon, 'tis a clear case she must be call'd so. Like enough, quoth Sancho ; for I have known several men in my time go by the names of the places where they were born, as Pedro de Alcala, Juan de Ubeda, Diego de Valladolid ; and may' ap the like is done in Guinea, and the queens go by the name of their kingdoms. 'Tis well observ'd,

reply'd



reply'd the curate: as for the match, I'll promote it to the utmost of my power. Sancho was heartily pleas'd with this promise; and on the other side, the curate was amaz'd to find the poor fellow so strangely infected with his master's mad notions, as to rely on his becoming an emperor. By this time Dorothea being mounted on the curate's mule, and the barber having clapp'd on his ox-tail beard, nothing remain'd but to order Sancho to shew 'em the way, and to renew their admonitions to him, lest he should seem to know 'em, and to spoil the plot, which if he did, they told him 'twould be the ruin of all his hopes and his master's empire. As for Cardenio, he did not think fit to go with 'em, having no business there; besides, he could not tell but that Don Quixote might remember their late fray. The curate likewise not thinking his presence necessary, resolv'd to stay to keep Cardenio company; so after he had once more given Dorothea her cue, she and the barber went before with Sancho, while the two others followed on foot at a distance.

Thus they went on for about three quarters of a league, and then among the rocks they spy'd Don Quixote, who had by this time put on his cloaths, tho' not his armour. Immediately Dorothea, understanding he was the person, whipp'd her palfry, and when she drew near Don Quixote, her squire alighted and took her from her saddle. When she was upon her feet, she gracefully advanc'd towards the knight, and, with her squire, falling on her knees before him, in spite of his endeavours to hinder her; Thrice valorous and invincible knight, said she, never will I rise from this place, till your generosity has granted me a boon, which shall redound to your honour, and the relief of the most disconsolate and most injur'd damsel that the sun ever saw: and indeed if your valour and the strength of your formidable arm be answerable to the extent of your immortal renown, you are bound by the laws of honour, and the knighthood which you profess, to succour a distress'd princess, who, led by the resounding fame of your marvellous and redoubted feats of arms,

comes



comes from the remotest regions, to implore your protection. I cannot, said Don Quixote, make you any answer, most beautiful lady, nor will I hear a word more, unless you vouchsafe to rise. Pardon me, noble knight, reply'd the petitioning damsel; my knees shall first be rooted here, unless you will courteously condescend to grant me the boon which I humbly request. I grant it then, lady, said Don Quixote, provided it be nothing to the disservice of my king, my country, and that beauty who keeps the key of my heart and liberty. It shall not tend to the prejudice or detriment of any of these, cry'd the lady. With that Sancho closing up to his master, and whispering him in the ear, grant it, sir, quoth he, grant it, I tell ye; 'tis but a trifle next to nothing, only to kill a great looby of a giant; and she that asks this, is the high and mighty princess Micomicona, queen of the huge kingdom of Micomicon in Ethiopia. Let her be what she will, reply'd Don Quixote, I will discharge my duty, and obey the dictates of my conscience, according to the rules of my profession. With that turning to the damsel, rise lady, I beseech you, cry'd he; I grant you the boon which your singular beauty demands. Sir, said the lady, the boon I have to beg of your magnanimous valour, is, that you will be pleased to go with me instantly whither I shall conduct you, and promise me not to engage in any other adventure, till you have reveng'd me on a traitor who usurps my kingdom, contrary to all laws both human and divine. I grant you all this, lady, quoth Don Quixote; and therefore from this moment shake off all desponding thoughts that sit heavy upon your mind, and study to revive your drooping hopes; for by the assistance of Heaven, and my strenuous arm, you shall see yourself restor'd to your kingdom, and seated on the throne of your ancestors, in spite of all the traitors that dare oppose your right. Let us then hasten our performance; delay always breeds danger; and to protract a great design is often to ruin it. The thankful princess, to speak her grateful sense of his generosity, strove to

kiss

It is the knight's hand; however, he who was in every thing the most gallant and courteous of all knights, would, by no means, admit of such a submission; but having gently raised her up, he embrac'd her with an awful grace and civility, and then call'd to Sancho for his arms. Sancho went immediately, and having fetch'd them from a tree, where they hung like trophies, arm'd his master in a moment. And now the champion being compleatly accoutred, come on, said he, let us go and vindicate the rights of this dispossessed princess. The barber was all this while upon his knees, and had enough to do to keep himself from laughing, and his beard from falling, which, if it had dropp'd off, as it threaten'd, would have betray'd his face and their whole plot at once. But being reliev'd by Don Quixote's haste to put on his armour, he rose up, and taking the princess by the hand, they both together set her upon her mule. Then the knight mounted his Rozinante, and the barber got on his beast. Only poor Sancho was forced to foot it, which made him fetch many a heavy sigh for the loss of his dear dapple: However, he bore his crosses patiently, seeing his master in so fair a way of being next door to an emperor; for he did not question but he would marry that princess, and so be, at least, king of Micomicon. But yet it griev'd him, to think his master's dominions were to be in the land of the negroes, and that, consequently, the people, over whom he was to be governor, were all to be black. But he presently bethought himself of a good remedy for that: What care I, quoth he, tho' they be blacks? best of all; 'tis but loading a ship with 'em, and having 'em into Spain, where I shall find chapmen enow to take 'em off my hands, and pay me ready money for 'em; and so I'll raise a good round sum, and buy me a title or an office to live upon frank and easy all the days of my life. Hang him that has no shifts, say I; 'tis a sorry goose that will not baste herself. Why what if I am not so book-learn'd as other folks, sure I've a headpiece good enough to know how to sell thirty or ten thousand slaves  
in

in the turn of a hand †. Let 'em e'en go higgledy-piggledy, little and great. What tho' they be as black as the devil in hell, let me alone to turn 'em into white and yellow boys: I think I know how to lick my own fingers. Big with these imaginations, Sancho trudg'd along pleas'd and light-hearted, that he forgot his pain of travelling afoot. Cardenio and the curate had beheld the pleasant scene thro' the bushes, and were at a loss what they should do to join companies. But the curate, who had a contriving head, at last bethought himself of an expedient; and pulling out a pair of scissors, which he us'd to carry in his pocket, he snipp'd off Cardenio's beard in a trice; and having pull'd off his black cloak and a sad coloured riding-coat which he had on, he equipp'd Cardenio with 'em, while he himself remained in his doublet and breeches. In which new garb Cardenio was so strangely alter'd, that he would not have known himself in a looking-glass. This done, they made to the high-way and their staid till Don Quixote and his company were got clear of the rocks and bad ways, which did not permit horsemen to go so fast as those on foot. When they came near, the curate look'd very earnestly upon Don Quixote, as one that was in a study whether he might not know him; and then, like one that had made a discovery, he ran towards the knight with open arms, crying out, mirror of chivalry, my noble countryman, Don Quixote de la Mancha! the cream and flower of gentility! the shelter and relief of the afflicted, and quintessence of knight-errantry! how overjoy'd am I to have found you! at the same time he embrac'd his left leg. Don Quixote admiring what adorer of his heroick worth this should be, look'd on him earnestly; and at last calling him to mind, would have alighted to have paid him his respects, not a little amaz'd to meet him there. But the curate hindring him, reverend sir, cry'd the knight, I beseech you let me not be so rude as to sit on horse back, while a person of your worth and character is

---

† Literally, *While one may say, take away the straws*; en quitame alla essas pajas, i. e. in a moment

foot. Sir, reply'd the curate, you shall by no means a-  
 light: Let your excellency be pleas'd to keep your saddle,  
 since thus mounted you every day atchieve the most stu-  
 pendous feats of arms and adventures that were ever seen  
 in our age. 'Twill be honour enough for an unworthy  
 priest, like me, to get up behind some of your company,  
 if they will permit me; and I will esteem it as great a  
 happiness as to be mounted upon Pegasus, or the Zebra\*,  
 or the fleet-mare of the famous moor Musaraque, who  
 to this hour lies enchanted in the dreary cavern of Zule-  
 ma, not far distant from the great Compluto†. Truly,  
 good sir, I did not think of this, answer'd Don Quixote;  
 but I suppose my lady the princess will be so kind as  
 to command her squire to lend you his saddle, and to  
 ride behind himself, if his mule be us'd to carry double.  
 I believe it will, cry'd the princess; and my squire, I  
 suppose, will not stay for my commands to offer his sad-  
 dle, for he is too courteous and well-bred to suffer an ec-  
 clesiastical person to go afoot, when we may help him to  
 a mule. Most certainly, cry'd the barber; and with that  
 dismounting, he offer'd the curate his saddle, which was  
 accepted without much intreaty. By ill fortune the  
 mule was a hir'd beast, and consequently unlucky; so  
 as the barber was getting up behind the curate, the resty  
 jade gave two or three jerks with her hinder legs, that  
 had they met with master Nicholas's scull or ribs, he  
 would have bequeath'd his rambling after Don Quixote  
 to the devil. However, he flung himself nimbly off,  
 and was more afraid than hurt; but yet as he fell his  
 beard drop'd off and being presently sensible of that ac-  
 cident he cou'd not think of any better shift than to clap  
 both his hands before his cheeks, and cry out he had  
 broke his jaw-bone. Don Quixote was amaz'd to see

---

\*Zebra, Stevens says, is a beast in Africk, shap'd like  
 a Horse, hard to be tam'd, wonderfull fleet, and will  
 hold its course all day.

† An university of Spain, now called Alcala de He-  
 nares.

such an overgrown bush of beard lie on the ground without jaws and bloodless. Bless me, cry'd he, what an amazing miracle is this! here's a beard as cleverly taken off by accident, as if a barber had mow'd it. The curate perceiving the danger they were in of being discovered, hastily caught up the beard, and running to the barber, who lay all the while roaring and complaining, he pull'd his head close to his own breast, and then muttering certain words, which he said were a charm appropriated to the fastning on of fal'n beards, he fix'd it on again so handsomely, that the squire was presently then as bearded and as well as ever he was before; which rais'd Don Quixote's admiration, and made him engage the curate to teach him the charm at his leisure, not doubting but its virtue extended further than to the fastning on of beards, since 'twas impossible that such a one cou'd be torn off without fetching away flesh and all; and consequently such a sudden cure might be beneficial to him upon occasion. And now every thing being set to rights, they agreed that the curate shou'd ride first by himself, and then the other two by turns relieving one another, sometimes riding, sometimes walking, till they came to their inn, which was about two leagues off. So Don Quixote, the princess and the curate being mounted, and Cardenio, the barber, and Sancho ready to move forwards on foot, the knight addressing himself to the distress'd damsel, now, lady, said he, let me intreat your greatness to tell me which way we must go, to do you service. The curate, before she cou'd answer, thought fit to ask her a question, that might the better enable her to make a proper reply. Pray madam, said he, towards what country is it your pleasure to take your progress? Is it not towards the kingdom of Micomicon? I am very much mistaken if that be not the part of the world whither you desire to go. The lady having her cue, presently understood the curate, and answer'd that he was in the right. Then, said the curate, your way lies directly through the village where I live, from whence we have a strait road to Carthagena, where you may conveniently take shipping; and if you have a fair wind and good



weather, you may in something less than nine years reach the vast lake Meona, I mean the Palus Mæotis, which lies somewhat more than a hundred days journey from your kingdom. Surely, sir, reply'd the lady, you are under a mistake; for 'tis not quite two years since I left the place; and besides, we have had very little fair weather all the while, and yet I am already got hither, and have so far succeeded in my designs, as to have obtain'd the sight of the renowned Don Quixote de la Mancha, the fame of whose achievements reach'd my ears as soon as I landed in Spain, and mov'd me to find him out, to throw my self under his protection, and commit the justice of my cause to his invincible valour. No more, madam, I beseech you, cry'd Don Quixote; spare me the trouble of hearing my self prais'd, for I mortally hate whatever may look like adulation; and tho' your complements may deserve a better name, my ears are too modest to be pleas'd with any such discourse; 'tis my study to deserve and to avoid applause. All I will venture to say, is, that whether I have any valour or no, I am wholly at your service, even at the expence of the last drop of my blood; and therefore waving all these matters till a fit opportunity, I would gladly know of this reverend clergyman what brought him hither, unattended by any of his servants, alone, and so slenderly cloath'd, for I must confess I am not a little surpriz'd to meet him in this condition. To tell you the reason in few words, answer'd the curate, you must know, that Mr. Nicholas, our friend and barber, went with me to Seville, to receive some money which a relation of mine sent me from the Indies, where he has been settled these many years; neither was it a small sum, for 'twas no less than seventy thousand pieces of eight, and all of due weight, which is no common thing, you may well judge: But upon the road hereabouts we met four highwaymen that robb'd us of all we had, even to our very beards, so that the poor barber was forc'd to get him a chin-periwig. And for that young gentleman whom you see there (continued he, pointing to Cardenio) after they had stripp'd him to his shirt, they trans-

figured him as you see \*. Now every body hereabouts says, that those who robb'd us were certainly a pack of rogues condemn'd to the gallies, who as they were going to punishment, were rescu'd by a single man, not far from this place, and that with so much courage, that in spite of the king's officer and his guards, he alone set 'em all at liberty. Certainly that man was either mad, or as great a rogue as any of 'em; for wou'd any one that had a grain of sense or honesty, have let loose a company of wolves among sheep, foxes among innocent poultry, and wasps among the honey-pots? he has hinder'd publick justice from taking its course, broke his allegiance to his lawful sovereign, disabled the strength of his gallies, rebelled against him, and oppos'd his officers in contempt of the law, and alarm'd the holy brotherhood, that had lain quiet so long; nay, what is yet worse, he has endanger'd his life upon earth, and his salvation hereafter. Sancho had given the curate an account of the adventure of the gally-slaves, and this made him lay it on thick in the relation, to try how Don Quixote would bear it. The knight chang'd colour at every word, not daring to confess he was the pious knight-errant who had deliver'd those worthy gentlemen out of bondage. These, said the curate, by way of conclusion, were the men that reduc'd us to this condition; and may heaven in mercy forgive him that freed 'em from the punishment they so well deserv'd.



### CHAP. III.

*The pleasant stratagems us'd to free the enamour'd knight from the rigorous penance which he had undertaken.*

SCARCE had the curate made an end, when Sancho addressing himself to him, faith and troth quoth he, master curate, he that did that rare jobb was my master his nown self, and that not for want of fair

---

\* *The priest had clipped off Cardenio's beard in haste.*

warning ; for I bid him have a care what he did, and told him over and over, 'twould be a grievous sin to put such a gang of wicked wretches out of durance, and that they all went to the gallies for their roguery. You buffle-headed clown, cry'd Don Quixote, Is it for a knight-errant when he meets with people laden with chains, and under oppreſſion, to examine whether they are in thoſe circumſtances for their crimes, or only thro' miſfortune ? We are only to relieve the afflicted, to look on their diſtreſs, and not on their crimes. I met a company of poor wretches, who went along ſorrowful, dejected and link'd together like the beads of a roſary ; thereupon I did what my conſcience and my profeſſion oblig'd me to. And what has any man to ſay to this ? If any one dares ſay otherwiſe, ſaving this reverend clergyman's preſence and the holy character he bears, I ſay, he knows little of knight-errantry, and lyes like a ſon of a whore, and a baſe-born villain ; and this I will make him know more effectually, with the convincing edge of my ſword ! This ſaid with a grim look, he fix'd himſelf in his ſtirrups, and pull'd his helm over his brows ; for the baſon, which he took to be Mambrino's helmet, hung at his ſaddle bow, in order to have the damage repair'd which it had receiv'd from the gally-slaves. Thereupon Dorothea, by this time well acquainted with his temper, ſeeing him in ſuch a paſſion, and that every body, except Sancho Panza, made a jeſt of him, reſolv'd with her native ſprightlineſs and addreſs, to carry on the humour. I beſeech you, Sir, cry'd ſhe, remember the promiſe you have made me, and that you cannot engage in any adventure whatſoever, till you have perform'd that we are going about. Therefore pray aſſuage your anger ; for had maſter curate known the gally-slaves were reſcu'd by your invincible arm, I am ſure he would rather have ſtitch'd up his lips, or bit off his tongue, than have ſpoken a word, that ſhould make him incur your diſpleaſure. Nay, I aſſure you, cry'd the curate, I would ſooner have twitch'd off one of my muſtaches into the bargain. I am ſatisfy'd, madam, cry'd Don Quixote, and for

your sake the flame of my just indignation is quench'd ; nor will I be induc'd to engage in any quarrel, till I have fulfill'd my promise to your highness. Only in recompense of my good intentions, I beg you will give us the story of your misfortunes, if this will not be too great a trouble to you ; and let me know who and what, and how many are the persons of whom I must have due and full satisfaction on your behalf. I am very willing to do it, reply'd Dorothea ; but yet I fear a story like mine, consisting wholly of afflictions and disasters, will prove but a tedious entertainment. Never fear that, madam, cry'd Don Quixote. Since then it must be so, said Dorothea, be pleas'd to lend me your attention. With that Cardenio and the barber gather'd up to her, to hear what kind of story she had provided so soon ; Sancho also hung his ears upon her side-saddle, being no less deceived in her than his master ; and the lady having seated herself well on her mule, after coughing once or twice, and other preparations, very gracefully began her story.

First, gentlemen, said she, you must know my name is — here she stopp'd short, and could not call to mind the name the curate had given her ; whereupon finding her at a nonplus, he made haste to help her out. 'Tis not at all strange, said he, madam, that you should be so discompos'd by your disasters, as to stumble at the very beginning of the account you are going to give of them ; extreme affliction often distracts the mind to that degree, and so deprives us of memory, that sometimes we for a while can scarce think on our very names : no wonder then, that the princess Micomicona, lawful heiress to the vast kingdom of Micomicon, disorder'd with so many misfortunes and perplex'd with so many various thoughts for the recovery of her crown, should have her imagination and memory so incumber'd ; but I hope you will now recollect yourself, and be able to proceed. I hope so too, said the lady, and I will try to go thro' with my story, without any further hesitation. Know, then gentlemen, that the king my father, who was call'd Tinacrio the sage, having great

skill

skill in the magic art, understood by his profound knowledge in that science, that Queen Xaramilla, my mother, should die before him, that he himself should not survive her long, and I should be left an orphan. But he often said, that this did not so much trouble him, as the foresight he had by his speculations, of my being threaten'd with great misfortunes, which would be occasion'd by a certain giant, lord of a great island near the confines of my kingdom; his name Pandafilando, surnam'd of the gloomy sight; because tho' his eye-balls are seated in their due place, yet he affects to squint and look askew on purpose to fright those on whom he stares. My father, I say, knew that this giant, hearing of his death would one day invade my kingdom with a powerful army, and drive me out of my territories, without leaving me so much as the least village for a retreat; tho' he knew withal that I might avoid that extremity, if I would but consent to marry him; but as he found out by his art, he had reason to think I never would incline to such a match. And indeed I never had any thoughts of marrying this giant, nor really any other giant in the world, how unmeasurably great and mighty soever he were. My father therefore charg'd me patiently to bear my misfortunes, and abandon my kingdom to Pandafilando for a time, without offering to keep him out by force of arms, since this would be the best means to prevent my own death and the ruin of my subjects, considering the impossibility of withstanding the devilish force of the giant. But withal, he order'd me to direct my course towards Spain, where I should be sure to meet with a powerful champion, in the person of a knight-errant, whose fame should at that time be spread over all the kingdom; and his name, my father said, should be, if I forget not, Don Azote \*, or Don Gigote. An't please you, forsooth, quoth Sancho, you would

---

\* Don Azote, is Don Horse-whip; and Don Gigote Don Husb or Minc'd Meat; wilful mistakes upon likeness of the words,



say Don Quixote, otherwise call'd the knight of the woful figure. You are right, answer'd Dorothea, and my father also describ'd him, and said he should be a tall thin fac'd man, and that on his right side, under the left shoulder, or somewhere thereabouts, he should have a tawny mole over-grown with a tuft of hair, not much unlike that of a horse's mane. With that Don Quixote calling for his squire to come to him ; here, said he, Sancho, help me off with my cloaths, for I'm resolv'd to see whether I be the knight of whom the negromantic king has prophesy'd. Pray sir, why would you pull off your cloaths, cry'd Dorothea ? To see whether I have such a mole about me as your father mention'd, reply'd the knight. Your worship need not strip to know that, quoth Sancho ; for to my knowledge, you've just such a mark as my lady says, on the small of your back, which betokens you to be a strong-body'd man. That's enough, said Dorothea ; friends may believe one another without such a strict examination ; and whether it be on the shoulder or on the back-bone, 'tis not very material. In short, I find my father aim'd right in all his predictions, and so do I in recommending myself to Don Quixote, whose stature and appearance so well agree with my father's description, and whose renown is so far spread, not only in Spain, but over all La Mancha †, that I had no sooner landed at Ossuna, but the fame of his prowess reach'd my ears ; so that I was satisfy'd in myself he was the person in quest of whom I came. But pray, madam, cry'd Don Quixote, how did you do to land at Ossuna, since 'tis no sea-port town ? Doubt-

---

† *This whimsical Anti-climax, says Farvis, puts one in mind of the instances of that figure in the Art of Sinking in Poetry, especially this :*

Under the Tropicks is our language spoke,  
And part of Flanders hath receiv'd our yoke.

*Pope and Swift's Miscellanies. Vol. III. p. 57.  
Shelton taking it perhaps for an error of the press, has put  
Æthiopia for La Mancha,*

less,

efs, fir, (said the curate, before Dorothea could answer for herself) the princess would say, that after she landed at Malaga, the first place where she heard of your feats of arms, was Ossuna. That's what I would have said, reply'd Dorothea. 'Tis easily understood, said the curate; then pray let your majesty be pleas'd to go on with your story. I've nothing more to add, answer'd Dorothea, but that fortune has at last so far favour'd me, as to make me find the noble Don Quixote, by whose valour I look upon myself as already restor'd to the throne of my ancestors; since he has so courteously, and magnanimously vouchsafed to grant me the boon I begg'd, to go with me wheresoever I shall guide him. For all I have to do is, to shew him this Pandafilando of the gloomy sight, that he may slay him, and restore that to me of which he has so unjustly depriv'd me. For all this will certainly be done with the greatest ease in the world, since 'twas foretold by Tinacrio the sage, my good and royal father, who has also left a prediction written either in Chaldaean or Greek characters (for I cannot read 'em) which denotes, that after the knight of the prophecy has cut off the giant's head, and restor'd me to the possession of my kingdom, if he should ask me to marry him, I should by no means refuse him, but instantly put him in possession of my person and kingdom. Well friend Sancho (said Don Quixote hearing this, and turning to the squire) what think'st thou now? Dost thou not hear how matters go? Did not I tell thee as much before! See now, whether we have not a kingdom which we may command, and a queen whom we may espouse. Ah marry have you, reply'd Sancho, and a pox take the son of a whore, I say, that will not wed and bed her majesty's grace as soon as master Pandafilando's wind-pipes are slit. Look what a dainty bit she is! ha! would I never had a worse flea in my bed! With that to shew his joy, he cut a couple of capers in the air; and turning to Dorothea, laid hold on her mule by the bridle, and flinging himself down on his knees, begg'd she would be graciously pleas'd to let him kiss her hand, in token of his owning her for his sovereign

reign lady. There was none of the beholders, but was ready to burst for laughter, having a sight of the master's madness, and the servant's simplicity. In short, Dorothea was oblig'd to comply with his intreaties, and promis'd to make him a grandee, when fortune should favour her with the recovery of her lost kingdom. Whereupon Sancho gave her his thanks, in such a manner as oblig'd the company to a fresh laughter. Then going on with her relation, gentlemen, said she, this is my history; and among all my misfortunes, this only has escap'd a recital, That not one of the numerous attendants I brought from my kingdom has surviv'd the ruins of my fortune, but this good squire with the long beard: the rest ended their days in a great storm, which dash'd our ship to pieces in the very sight of the harbour; and he and I had been sharers in their destiny, had we not laid hold of two planks, by which assistance we were driven to land, in a manner altogether miraculous, and agreeable to the whole series of my life, which seems, indeed, but one continued miracle. And if in any part of my relation I have been tedious, and not so exact as I should have been, you must impute it to what master curate observ'd to you, in the beginning of my story, that continual troubles oppress the senses, and weaken the memory. Those pains and afflictions, be they ever so intense and difficult, said Don Quixote, shall never deter me (most virtuous and high-born lady) from adventuring for your service, and enduring whatever I shall suffer in it: and therefore I again ratify the assurances I've given you, and swear that I will bear you company, tho' to the end of the world, in search of this implacable enemy of yours, till I shall find him; whose insulting head, by the help of heaven, and my own invincible arm, I am resolv'd to cut off, with the edge of this (I will not say good) sword; a curse on Gines de Passamonte, who took away my own! this he spoke murmuring to himself, and then prosecuted his discourse in this manner: and after I have divided it from the body, and left you quietly possess'd of your throne, it shall be left at your own choice to dispose of your person,

son, as you shall think convenient : for as long as I shall have my memory full of her image, my will captivated, and my understanding wholly subjected to her, whom I now forbear to name, 'tis impossible I should in the least deviate from the affection I bear to her, or be induc'd to think of marrying, tho' it were a Phoenix.

The close of Don Quixote's speech, which related to his not marrying, touch'd Sancho so to the quick, that he could not forbear bawling out his resentments : Body o' me, Sir Don Quixote, cry'd he, you are certainly out of your wits, or how is it possible you should stick at striking a bargain with so great a lady as this is ? D' you think, sir, fortune will put such dainty bits in your way at every corner ? Is my lady Dulcinea handsomer, d' you think ? No marry is she not half so handsome : I could almost say she's not worthy to tie this lady's shoe-lachets. I am likely indeed to get the earldom I have fed myself with hopes of, if you spend your time in fishing for mushrooms in the bottom of the sea. Marry, marry out of hand, or Old Nick take you for me ; lay hold of the kingdom which is ready to leap into your hands ; and as soon as you are a king, e'en make me a marquis, or a peer of the land, and afterwards let things go at sixes and sevens, 'twill be all a case to Sancho. Don Quixote, quite divested of all patience, at the blasphemies which were spoken against his lady Dulcinea, could bear with him no longer ; and therefore, without so much as a word to give him notice of his displeasure, gave him two such blows with his lance, that poor Sancho measur'd his length on the ground, and had certainly there breath'd his last, had not the knight desisted, through the persuasions of Dorothea. Think'st thou (said he, after a considerable pause) most infamous peasant, that I shall always have leisure and disposition to put up thy affronts ; and that thy whole business shall be to study new offences, and mine to give thee new pardons ? Dost thou not know, excommunicated traitor (for certainly excommunication is the least punishment can fall upon thee, after such profanations

tions of the peerless Dulcinea's name) and art thou not assur'd, vile slave and ignominious vagabond, that I should not have strength sufficient to kill a flea, did not she give strength to my nerves, and infuse vigour into my sinews? Speak, thou villain with the viper's tongue; who dost thou imagine has restor'd the queen to her kingdom, cut off the head of a giant, and made thee a marquis (for I count all this as done already) but the power of Dulcinea, who makes use of my arm, as the instrument of her act in me? She fights and overcomes in me; and I live and breathe in her, holding life and being from her. Thou base-born wretch! art thou not possess'd of the utmost ingratitude, thou who see'st thyself exalted from the very dregs of the earth, to nobility and honour, and yet dost repay so great a benefit with obloquies against the person of thy benefactress.

Sancho was not so mightily hurt, but he could hear what his master said well enough; wherefore getting upon his legs in all haste, he ran for shelter behind Dorothea's palfry, and being got thither, hark you, sir, cry'd he to him, if you have no thought of marrying this same lady, 'tis a clear case that the kingdom will never be yours; and if it be not, what good can you be able to do me? Then let any one judge whether I have not cause to complain. Therefore, good your worship, marry her once for all, now we have her rain'd down, as it were, from heaven to us, and you may after keep company with my lady Dulcinea; for I guess you'll not be the only king in the world, that has kept a miss or two in a corner. As for beauty, d'you see, I'll not meddle nor make; for (if I must say the truth) I like both the gentlewomen well enough in conscience; tho' now I think on't, I have never seen the lady Dulcinea. How, not seen her, blasphemous traitor, reply'd Don Quixote, when just now thou brought'st me a message from her! I say, answer'd Sancho, I have not seen her so leisurely as to take notice of her features and good parts one by one; but yet, as I saw 'em at a blush, and all at once, methought I had no reason to find fault with 'em. Well, I pardon thee now, quoth

Don



Don Quixote, and thou must excuse me for what I have done to thee ; for the first motions are not in our power. I perceive that well enough, said Sancho, and that's the reason my first motions are always in my tongue ; and I can't for my life help speaking what comes uppermost. However, friend Sancho, said Don Quixote, thou had'st best think before thou speakest ; for the pitcher never goes so oft to the well — I need say no more. Well, what must be must be, answer'd Sancho, there's somebody above who sees all, and will one day judge which has most to answer for, whether I for speaking amiss, or you for doing so. No more of this Sancho, said Dorothea, but run, and kiss your lord's hands, and beg his pardon ; and for the time to come, be more advis'd and cautious how you run into the praise or dispraise of any person ; but especially take care you do not speak ill of that lady of Toboso, whom I do not know, tho' I am ready to do her any service ; and for your own part, trust in heaven ; for you shall infallibly have a lordship, which shall enable you to live like a prince. Sancho shrugg'd up his shoulders, and in a sneaking posture went and ask'd his master for his hand, which he held out to him with a grave countenance ; and after the squire had kiss'd the back of it, the knight gave him his blessing, and told him he had a word or two with him, bidding him come nearer, that he might have the better convenience of speaking to him. Sancho did as his master commanded, and going a little from the company with him ; since thy return, said Don Quixote, applying himself to him, I have neither had time nor opportunity to enquire into the particulars of thy embassy, and the answer thou hast brought ; and therefore since fortune has now befriended us with convenience and leisure, deny me not the satisfaction thou may'st give me by the rehearsal of thy news. Ask what you will, cry'd Sancho, and you shall not want for an answer ; but good your worship, for the time to come, I beseech you don't be too hasty. What occasion hast thou, Sancho, to make this request, reply'd Don Quixote ? Reason good enough truly, said Sancho ; for

the blows you gave me e'en now, were rather given me on account of the quarrel which the devil stirr'd up between your worship and me t'other night, than for your dislike of any thing which was spoken against my lady Dulcinea. Pr'ythee, Sancho, cry'd Don Quixote, be careful of falling again into such irreverent expressions; for they provoke me to anger, and are highly offensive. I pardon'd thee then for being a delinquent, but thou art sensible that a new offence must be attended with a new punishment. As they were going on in such discourse as this, they saw at a distance a person riding up to 'em on an ass, who, as he came near enough to be distinguish'd, seem'd to be a gipsy by his habit. But Sancho Panza, who, whenever he got sight of any asses, follow'd them with his eyes and his heart, as one whose thoughts were ever fix'd on his own, had scarce given him half an eye, but he knew him to be Gines de Pasamonte, and by the looks of the gipsy found out the visage of his ass; as really it was the very same which Gines had got under him; who, to conceal himself from the knowledge of the publick, and have the better opportunity of making a good market of his beast, had cloth'd himself like a gipsy; the cant of that sort of people, as well as the languages of other countries, being as natural and familiar to them as their own. Sancho saw him and knew him; and scarce had he seen and taken notice of him, when he cried out as loud as his tongue would permit him: ah; thou thief Genesillo, leave my goods and chattels behind thee; get off from the back of my own dear life: thou hast nothing to do with my poor beast, without whom I can't enjoy a moment's ease: away from my dapple, away from my comfort; take to thy heels thou villain; hence thou hedge-bird, leave what is none of thine. He had no occasion to use so many words; for Gines dismounted as soon as he heard him speak, and taking to his heels, got from 'em, and was out of sight in an instant. Sancho ran immediately to his ass, and embrac'd him: how hast thou done, cry'd he, since I saw thee, my darling and treasure, my dear dapple, the delight of my eyes,

eyes, and my dearest companion? And then he stroak'd and slabber'd him with kisses, as if the beast had been a rational creature. The ass, for his part, was as silent as cou'd be, and gave Sancho the liberty of as many kisses as he pleas'd, without the return of so much as one word to the many questions he had put to him. At sight of this the rest of the company came up with him, and paid their compliments of congratulation to Sancho for the recovery of his ass, especially Don Quixote, who told him, that tho' he had found his ass again, yet would not he revoke the warrant he had giv'n him for the three asses; for which favour Sancho return'd him a multitude of thanks.

While they were travelling together, and discoursing after this manner, the curate address'd himself to Dorothea, and gave her to understand, that she had excellently discharg'd herself of what she had undertaken, as well in the management of the history itself, as in her brevity, and adapting her stile to the particular terms made use of in books of knight-errantry. She return'd for answer, that she had frequently convers'd with such romances, but that she was ignorant of the situation of the provinces, and the sea-ports, which occasion'd the blunder she had made, by saying that she landed at Ofsuna. I perceiv'd it, reply'd the curate, and therefore I put in what you heard, which brought matters to rights again. But is it not an amazing thing, to see how ready this unfortunate gentleman is to give credit to these fictitious reports, only because they have the air of the extravagant stories in books of knight-errantry? Cardenio said, that he thought this so strange a madness, that he did not believe the wit of man with all the liberty of invention and fiction, capable of hitting so extraordinary a character. The gentleman, reply'd the curate, has some qualities in him, ev'n as surprizing in a madman, as his unparallel'd frenzy: for, take him but off from his romantick humour, discourse with him of any other subject, you will find him to handle it with a great deal of reason, and shew himself, by his conversation, to have very clear and entertaining concep-

tions: infomuch that if knight-errantry bears no relation to his discourse, there is no man but will esteem him for his vivacity of wit, and strength of judgment. While they were thus discoursing, Don Quixote, prosecuting his converse with his squire; Sancho, said he, let us lay aside all manner of animosity, let us forget and forgive injuries \*; and answer me as speedily as thou can'st, without any remains of thy last displeasure, how, when, and where didst thou find my lady Dulcinea? What was she doing when thou first pay'dst thy respects to her? How didst thou express thyself to her? What answer was she pleas'd to make thee? What countenance did she put on at the perusal of my letter? Who transcrib'd it fairly for thee? And every thing else which has any relation to this affair, without addition, lies or flattery. On the other side, take care thou losest not a tittle of the whole matter, by abbreviating it, lest thou rob me of part of that delight which I propose to myself from it. Sir, answer'd Sancho, if I must speak the truth, and nothing but the truth, no body copy'd out the letter for me; for I carry'd none at all. That's right, cry'd Don Quixote, for I found the pocket-book, in which it was written, two days after thy departure, which occasion'd exceeding grief in me, because I knew not what thou could'st do, when thou found'st thyself without the letter; and I cou'd not but be induc'd to believe that thou would'st have return'd, in order to take it with thee. I had certainly done so, reply'd

---

\* *In the original Spanish it is — Echemos pelillos a la mar: i. e. literally, let us throw small little hairs into the sea; but figuratively, let us renew our friendship and forget past differences: Renouons, &c. says Sobrino, in his French exposition of that phrase. And Oudin translates it in French — Mettons toutes nos Disputes sous le pied, Let us put all disputes under our feet; tho' he owns it can't be translated properly into French, unless by saying jettons à vau l'eau, Let us make a wreck of all disputes, i. e. drown 'em.*

Sancho,

Sancho  
it in re  
and he  
it out  
tho' b  
tion in  
read o  
do'st  
cho, c  
soon a  
was v  
thing  
high  
at th  
woful  
hund

\*\*\*

The

A  
queer  
foun  
some  
was  
squir  
serio  
may  
grain  
it v  
lity  
indi  
leas  
brea  
you  
furs

Sancho, were it not for this head of mine, which kept it in remembrance ever since your worship read it to me, and help'd me to say it over to a parish-clerk, who writ it out for me word for word so purely, that he swore, tho' he had written out many a letter of excommunication in his time, he never in all the days of his life had read or seen any thing so well spoken as it was. And do'st thou still retain the memory of it, my dear Sancho, cry'd Don Quixote? Not I, quoth Sancho; for as soon as I had giv'n it her, and your turn was serv'd, I was very willing to forget it. But if I remember any thing, 'tis what was on the top; and it was thus; high and subterrene, I wou'd say sovereign lady; and at the bottom, yours until death, the knight of the woful figure; and I put between these two things, three hundred souls and lives and pigsnyes.

\*\*\*\*\*

CHAP. IV.

*The pleasant dialogue between Don Quixote and his squire continu'd, with other adventures.*

ALL this is mighty well, said Don Quixote, proceed therefore: you arriv'd, and how was that queen of beauty then employ'd? On my conscience thou found'st her stringing of orient pearls, or embroidering some curious device in gold for me her captive knight; was it not so, my Sancho? No faith, answer'd the squire, I found her winnowing a parcel of wheat very seriously in the back-yard. Then said the Don, you may rest assur'd, that every corn of that wheat was a grain of pearl, since she did it the honour of touching it with her divine hand. Didst thou observe the quality of the wheat, was it not of the finest sort? Very indifferent, I thought, said the squire. Well, this, at least, you must allow; it must make the finest whitest bread, if sifted by her white hands: but go on; when you deliver'd my letter, did she kiss it? Did she treasure it in her bosom, or what ceremony did she use wor-



thy such a letter? How did she behave herself? Why truly, sir, answer'd Sancho, when I offer'd her the letter, she was very busy handling her sieve; and, pr'ythee honest friend, said she, do so much as lay that letter down upon the sack there; I can't read it till I have winnow'd out what's in my Hands. O unparallel'd discretion! cry'd Don Quixote, she knew that a perusal requir'd leisure, and therefore deferr'd it for her more pleasing and private hours. But oh! my squire; while she was thus employ'd, what conferences past? What did she ask about her knight, and what did you reply? Say all, say all, my dearest Sancho, let not the smallest circumstance 'scape the tongue; speak all that thought can frame, or pen describe. Her questions were easily answer'd, sir, said Sancho, for she ask'd me none at all: I told her indeed, in what a sad pickle I had left you for her sake, naked to the waste; that you eat and slept like the brute beasts; that you wou'd let a razor as soon touch your throat as your beard; that you were still blubbering and crying, or swearing and cursing your fortune. There you mistook, reply'd Don Quixote, I rather bless my fortune, and always shall, while life affords me breath, since I am thought to merit the esteem of so high a lady as Dulcinea del Toboso. There you hit it, said Sancho, she is a high lady indeed, sir, for she's taller than I am by a foot and half†. Why, how now, Sancho, said the knight, hast thou measur'd with her! ah marry did I, sir, said the squire; for you must know that she desir'd me to lend her a hand in lifting a sack of wheat on an ass; so we buckl'd about it, and I came so close to her, that I found she was taller than I by a full span at least. Right, answer'd Don Quixote, but thou art also conscious that the un-

---

† Coto in Spanish, which Sobrino says is but a hand-ful, so says Stevens in his dictionary, tho' he translates it in this place a cubit. Oudin says it is the breadth of four fingers, and the height of the thumb when rais'd up in clenching the fist.

common stature of her person is adorn'd with innumerable graces and endowments of soul ! but Sancho, when you approach'd the charming she, did not an aromattick smell strike thy sense, a scent so odoriferous, pleasing and sweet, that I want a name for it ; sweet as — you understand me, as the richest fragrancy diffus'd around a perfumer's magazine of odours ? This, at least, you must grant me. I did indeed feel a sort of scent a little unfavoury, said Sancho, somewhat vigorous or so ; for I suppose she had wrought hard, and sweat somewhat plentifully. 'Tis false, answer'd the knight, thy smelling has been debauch'd by thy own scent, or some canker in thy nose ; if thou could'st tell the scent of opening roses, fragrant lilies, or the choicest amber, then thou might'st guess at her's. Cry mercy, sir, said Sancho, it may be so indeed, for I remember that I myself have smelt very oft just as madam Dulcinea did then, and that she shou'd smell like me, is no such wondrous thing neither, since there's never a barrel the better herring of us. But now, said the knight, supposing the corn winnow'd and dispatch'd to the mill ; what did she after she had read my letter ? Your letter, sir ! answer'd Sancho, your letter was not read at all, sir ; as for her part, she said, she cou'd neither read nor write, and she would trust no body else, lest they should tell tales, and so she cunningly tore your letter. She said, that what I told her by word of mouth of your love and penance was enough : to make short now, she gave her service to you, and said she had rather see you than hear from you ; and she pray'd you, if ever you lov'd her, upon sight of me, forthwith to leave your madness among the bushes here, and come strait to Toboso (if you be at leisure) for she has something to say to you, and has a huge mind to see you : she had like to burst with laughing, when I call'd you the knight of the woful figure. She told me the Biscayan whom you maul'd so was there, and that he was a very honest fellow ; but that she heard no news at all of the gally-slaves.

Thus

Thus far all goes well, said Don Quixoté ; but tell me pray, what jewel did she present you at your departure, as a reward for the news you brought ? for 'tis a custom of ancient standing among knights and ladies-errant, to bestow on squires, dwarfs, or damsels, who bring them good news of their ladies or servants, some precious jewel as a grateful reward of their welcome tidings. Ah, sir, said Sancho, that was the fashion in the days of yore ; and a very good fashion I take it : but all the jewels Sancho got, was a luncheon of bread and a piece of cheese, which she handed to me over the wall, when I was taking my leave, by the same token (I hope there's no ill luck in't) the cheese was made of sheep's milk. 'Tis strange, said Don Quixote, for she is liberal, even to profuseness ; and if she presented thee not a jewel, she certainly had none about her at that time ; but what is deferr'd is not lost, sleeves are good after Easter\*. I shall see her, and matters shall be accommodated. Know'st thou, Sancho, what raises my astonishment ? 'tis thy sudden return ; for proportioning thy short absence to the length of thy journey, Tobofo being, at least, thirty leagues distant, thou must have ridden on the wind ; certainly the sagacious enchanter, who is my guardian and friend (for doubtless such a one there is and ought to be, or I shou'd not be a true knight-errant) certainly, I say, that wise magician has further'd thee on thy journey unawares : for there are sages of such incredible power, as to take up a knight-errant sleeping in his bed, and waken him next morning a thousand leagues from the place where he fell asleep. By this power knights-errant succour one another in their most dangerous exigents, when and where they please ; for instance, suppose me fighting in the mountains of Arme-

---

\* *A proverbial expression, signifying that a good thing is always seasonable. The Spaniards, for the sake of warmth, wear sleeves in winter, 'till about Easter ; but if the weather continues cold, sleeves may be proper after Easter.*

nia with some hellish monster, some dreadful spright, or fierce gigantick knight, where perhaps I am like to be worsted (such a thing may happen) when just in the very crisis of my fate, when I least expect it, behold on the top of a flying cloud, or riding in a flaming chariot, another knight, my friend, who but a minute before was in England perhaps ; he sustains me, delivers me from death, and returns that night to his own lodging, where he sups with a very good appetite after his Journey, having rid you two or three thousand leagues that day : and all this perform'd by the industry and wisdom of these knowing magicians, whose only business and charge is glorious knight-errantry. Some such expeditious power, I believe, Sancho, though hidden from you, has promoted so great a dispatch in your late journey. I believe, indeed (answer'd Sancho) that there was witchcraft in the case, for Rozinante went without spur all the way, and was as mettlesome as though he had been a gypsy's ass with quicksilver in his ears. Quicksilver ! you coxcomb, said the knight, ay, and a troop of devils besides ; and they are the best horse-courfers in nature, you must know, for they must needs go whom the devil drives ; but no more of that. What is thy advice as to my lady's commands to visit her ? I know her power should regulate my will ; but then my honour, Sancho, my solemn promise has engag'd me to the princess's service that comes with us, and the law of arms confines me to my word : love draws me one, and glory t'other way ; on this side Dulcinea's strict commands, on the other my promis'd Faith ; but — 'tis resolv'd. I'll travel night and day, cut off this giant's head, and having settl'd the princess in her dominions, will presently return to see that sun which enlightens my senses : she will easily condescend to excuse my absence, when I convince her 'twas for her fame and glory ; since the past, present, and future success of my victorious arms depends wholly on the gracious influences of her favour, and the honour of being her knight. Oh sad, oh sad ! said Sancho, I doubt your worship's head is much the worse for wearing : are you mad, sir, to take so long a  
voyage

voyage for nothing? why don't you catch at this preferment that now offers, where a fine kingdom is the Portion, twenty thousand leagues round, they say; nay, bigger than Portugal and Castile both together — Good your worship! hold your tongue, I wonder you are not ashamed — take a fool's council for once, marry her by the first priest you meet, here's our own curate can do the jobb most curiously †: Come master, I have hair enough in my beard to make a counsellor, and my advice is as fit for you, as your shoe for your foot; a bird in hand is worth two in the bush, and

He that will not when he may,  
When he wou'd, he shall have nay.

Thou advisest me thus, answer'd Don Quixote, that I may be able to promote thee according to my promise: but that I can do without marrying this lady: for I shall make this the condition of entring into battle: that after my victory, without marrying the princess, she shall leave part of her kingdom at my disposal, to gratify whom I please; and who can claim any such gratuity but thyself? that's plain, answer'd Sancho, but pray, sir, take care that you reserve some part near the sea-side for me; that if the air does not agree with me, I may transport my black slaves, make my profit of them, and go live somewhere else; so that I would have you resolve upon it presently, leave the lady Dulcinea for the present, and go kill this same giant, and make an end of that business first; for I dare swear 'twill yield you a good market. I am fix'd in thy opinion (said Don Quixote) but I admonish thee not to whisper to any person the least hint of our conference; for since Dulcinea is so cautious and secret, 'tis proper that I and mine should follow her example. Why the devil then, said Sancho, should you send every body you overcome packing to madam Dulcinea, to fall down before her, and tell her

---

† *As if 'twas done with pearl, in the original: lo harà de parlas, i. e. to a nicety.*



they came from you to pay their obedience, when this tells all the world that she's your mistress as much as if they had it under your own hand? how dull of apprehension and stupid thou art, said the knight; hast thou not sense to find that all this redounds to her greater glory? know that in proceedings in chivalry, a lady's honour is calculated from the number of her servants, whose services must not tend to any reward, but the favour of her acceptance, and the pure honour of performing them for her sake, and being call'd her servants. I have heard our curate, answer'd Sancho, preach up this doctrine of loving for love's sake, and that we ought to love our maker so for his own sake, without either hope of good, or fear of pain; tho' for my part I would love and serve him for what I could get. Thou art an unaccountable fellow, cry'd Don Quixote: thou talk'st sometimes with so much sense, that one would imagine thee to be something of a scholar. A scholar, sir, answer'd Sancho, lack a-day, I don't know, as I'm a honest man, a letter in the book. Master Nicholas seeing them so deep in discourse, call'd to them to stop and drink at a little fountain by the road: Don Quixote halted, and Sancho was very glad of the interruption, his stock of lies being almost spent, and he stood in danger besides of being trapp'd in his words, for he had never seen Dulcinea, though he knew she liv'd at Toboso. Cardenio by this had chang'd his clothes for those Dorothea wore, when they found her in the mountains; and though they made but an ordinary figure, they look'd much better than those he had put off\*. They all stopp'd at the fountain, and fell aboard the curate's provision, which was but a snap among so many, for they were all very hungry. While they sat refreshing themselves, a younglad, travelling that way, observ'd them, and, looking earnestly on the whole company, ran sud-

---

\* These must be the ragged apparel Cardenio wore before he was dress'd in the priest's short cassock and cloak.

denly and fell down before Don Quixote, addreffing him in a very doleful manner. Alas, good fir, faid he, don't you know me? don't you remember poor Andrew, whom you caus'd to be unt'y'd from the tree? with that the knight knew him; and raifing him up, turn'd to the company, that you may all know, faid he, of how great importance, to the redreffing of injuries, punifhing vice, and the univerfal benefit of mankind, the bufinefs of knight-errantry may be, you muft underftand, that riding through a defart fome days ago, I heard certain lamentable fcreaks and out-cries: prompted by the mifery of the afflicted, and borne away by the zeal of my profeflion I follow'd the voice, and found this boy, whom you all fee, bound to a great oak; I'm glad he's prefent, becaufe he can attelt the truth of my relation. I found him as I told you, bound to an oak, naked from the wafte upwards, and a bloody-minded peafant fcourging his back unmercifully with the reins of a bridle. I prefently demanded the caufe of his fevere chaftifement? the rude fellow anfwer'd, that he had liberty to punifh his own fervant, whom he thus us'd for fome faults that argu'd him more knave than fool. Good fir, faid the boy, he can lay nothing to my charge, but demanding my wages. His mafter made fome reply, which I would not allow as a juft excufe, and order'd him immediately to unbind the youth, and took his oath that he would take him home and pay him all his wages upon the nail, in good and lawful coin. Is not this literally true, Andrew? did you not mark befides, with what face of authority I commanded, and with how much humility he promis'd to obey all I impos'd, commanded and defir'd? anfwer me, boy, and tell boldly all that pafs'd to this worthy company, that it may appear how neceffary the vocation of knights-errant is up and down the high roads.

All you have faid is true enough, anfwer'd Andrew, but the bufinefs did not end after that manner you and I hop'd it would. How? faid the knight, has not the peafant paid you? ay, he has paid me with a vengeance, faid the boy, for no fooner was your back turn'd, but he

ty'd

ty'd me again to the same tree, and lash'd me so curfedly, that I look'd like St. Bartholomew flea'd alive; and at every blow he had some joke or another to laugh at you; and had he not laid me on as he did, I fancy I could not have help'd laughing myself. At last he left me in so pitiful a case, that I was forc'd to crawl to an hospital, where I have lain ever since to get cur'd, so wofully the tyrant had lash'd me. And now I may thank you for this, for had you rid on your journey, and neither meddl'd nor made, seeing no body sent for you, and 'twas none of your business, my master, perhaps, had been satisfy'd with giving me ten or twenty lashes, and after that would have paid me what he ow'd me; but you was so huffy, and call'd him so many names, that it made him mad, and so he vented all his spight against you upon my poor back, as soon as yours was turn'd, insomuch that I fear I shall never be my own man again. The miscarriage, answer'd the knight, is only chargeable on my departure before I saw my orders executed; for I might by experience, have remembred, that the word of a peasant is regulated, not by honour, but profit. But you remember, Andrew, how I swore if he disobey'd, that I would return and seek him through the universe, and find him, tho' hid in a whale's belly. Ah, sir, answer'd Andrew, but that's no cure for my fore shoulders. You shall be redress'd, answer'd the knight, starting fiercely up, and commanding Sancho immediately to bridle Rozinante, who was baiting as fast as the rest of the company. Dorothea ask'd what he intended to do? he answer'd, that he intended to find out the villain and punish him severely for his crimes, then force him to pay Andrew his wages to the last \* Maravedi, in spite of all the peasants in the universe. She then desir'd him to remember his engagements to her, which with-held him from any new atchievement till that was finish'd; that he must therefore suspend his resentments till his return from her kingdom. 'Tis but just and reasonable, said the knight, and

---

\* *Near the value of a farthing.*

therefore Andrew must wait with patience my return: but when I do return, I do hereby ratify my former oath and promise, never to rest till he be fully satisfy'd and paid. I dare not trust to that, answer'd Andrew; but if you'll bestow on me as much money as will bear my charges to Seville, I shall thank your worship more than for all the revenge you tell me of: Give me a snap to eat, and a bit in my pocket, and so heaven be wi'ye and all other knights-errant, and may they prove as arrant fools in their own business as they have been in mine.

Sancho took a crust of bread and a slice of cheese, and reaching it to Andrew, there friend, said he, there's something for thee; on my word, we have all of us a share of thy mischance. What share? said Andrew. Why the curst mischance of parting with this bread and cheese to thee; for my head to a half-penny, I may live to want it; for thou must know, friend of mine, that we, the squires of knights-errant, often pick our teeth without a dinner, and are subject to many other things, which are better felt than told. Andrew snatch'd at the provender, and seeing no likelihood of any more, he made his leg and march'd off. But looking over his shoulder at Don Quixote, hark-ye, you sir knight-errant, cry'd he, if ever you meet me again in your travels, which I hope you never shall; though I were torn in pieces, don't trouble me with your plaguy help, but mind your own business; and so fare you well, with a curse upon you and all the knights-errant that ever were born. The knight thought to chastise him, but the lad was too nimble for any there, and his heels carry'd him off; leaving Don Quixote highly incens'd at his story, which mov'd the company to hold their laughter, lest they should raise his anger to a dangerous height.



CHAP. V.

*What befel Don Quixote and his company at the inn.*

WHEN they had eaten plentifully, they left that place, and travell'd all that day and the next, without meeting any thing worth notice, till they came to the inn, which was so frightful a sight to poor Sancho, that he wou'd willingly not have gone in, but could by no means avoid it. The inn-keeper, the hostess, her daughter, and Maritornes, met Don Quixote and his squire with a very hearty welcome: the knight receiv'd them with a face of gravity and approbation, bidding them prepare him a better bed than their last entertainment afforded him. Sir, said the hostess, pay us better than you did then, and you shall have a bed for a prince; and upon the knight's promise that he would, she provided him a tolerable bed, in the large room where he lay before: he presently undress'd, and being heartily craz'd in body, as well as in mind, he went to bed. He was scarcely got to his chamber, when the hostess flew suddenly at the barber, and catching him by the beard, on my life, said she, you shall use my tail no longer for a beard; pray, sir, give me my tail, my husband wants it to stick his thing into, his comb I mean, and my tail I will have, sir. the barber held tug with her till the curate advis'd him to return it, telling him that he might now undisguise himself, and tell Don Quixote, that after the gally-slaves had pillag'd him, he fled to that inn; and if he shou'd ask for the princess's squire, he shou'd pretend that he was dispatch'd to her kingdom before her, to give her subjects an account of her arrival, and of the power she brought to free them all from slavery. The barber thus school'd, gave the hostess her tail, with the other trinkets which he had borrow'd to decoy Don Quixote out of the desert. Dorothea's beauty, and



Cardenio's handsome shape surpriz'd every body. The curate bespoke supper, and the host, being pretty secure of his reckoning, soon got them a tolerable entertainment. They would not disturb the knight, who slept very soundly, for his distemper wanted rest more than meat; but they diverted themselves with the hostess's account of his encounter with the carriers, and of Sancho's being toss'd in a blanket. Don Quixote's unaccountable madness was the principal subject of their discourse, upon which the curate insisting, and arguing it to proceed from his reading romances, the inn-keeper took him up. Sir, said he, you can't make me of your opinion; for in my mind, it is the pleasanterest reading that ever was. I have now in the house two or three books of that kind, and some other pieces, that really have kept me, and many others, alive. In harvest-time, a great many of the reapers come to drink here in the heat of the day, and he that can read best among us takes up one of these books; and all the rest of us, sometimes thirty or more, sit round about him, and listen with such pleasure, that we think neither of sorrow nor care; as for my own part, when I hear the mighty blows and dreadful battles of these knights-errant, I have half a mind to be one myself, and am rais'd to such a life and briskness, that I frighten away old age; I could sit and hear them from morning till night. I wish you wou'd husband, said the hostess, for then we should have some rest; for at all other times you are so out of humour and so snappish, that we lead a hellish life with you. That's true enough, said Maritornes; and for my part, I think there are mighty pretty stories in those books, especially that one about the young lady who is hugg'd so sweetly by her knight under the orange-tree, when the damsel watches lest somebody comes, and stands with her mouth watering all the while; and a thousand such stories, which I would often forego my dinner and supper to hear. And what think you of this matter, young miss, said the curate to the inn-keeper's daughter? alack-a-day, sir, said she, I don't understand those things, and yet I love to hear 'em: but I don't like that frightful ugly fighting

fighting that so pleases my father. Indeed the sad lamentations of the poor knights, for the loss of their mistresses, sometimes makes me cry like any thing. I suppose then, young gentlewoman, said Dorothea, you will be tender-hearted, and will never let a lover die for you. I don't know what may happen, as to that, said the girl; but this I know, that I will never give any body reason to call me tygres and lionsess, and I don't know how many other ugly names, as those ladies are often call'd, and I think they deserve yet worse, so they do; for they can never have soul nor conscience to let such fine gentlemen die or run mad for a sight of them? what signifies all their fiddling and coyness? if they are civil women why don't they marry 'em, for that's all their knights would be at? hold your prating, Mistrefs, said the hostess, how came you to know all this? 'Tis not for such as you to talk of these matters. The gentleman only ask'd me a question, said she, and it would be uncivil not to answer him. Well, said the curate, do me the favour, good landlord, to bring out these books that I may have a sight of them.

With all my heart, said the inn-keeper; and with that stepping to his chamber, he open'd a little portmantle that shut with a chain, and took out three large volumes, with a parcel of manuscripts in a fair legible letter: the title of the first was Don Cirongilio of Thrace; the second Felixmarte of Hircania; and the third was the history of the great captain Gonçalo Hernandez de Corduba, and the life of Diego Garcia de Paredes, bound together \*. The curate reading the titles, turn'd to the

---

\* *There were such famous leaders, as the great captain, who conquer'd Naples for king Ferdinand of Spain, and Diego Garcia before him; but authors have added such monstrous fables to their true actions, that there is no more believing any of them, than the fables of Guy of Warwick, or the like romantic heroes, as may appear by what the curate speaks in their praise.*

barber, and told him, they wanted now Don Quixote's house-keeper and his niece. I shall do as well with the books, said the barber, for I can find the way to the back-yard, or the chimney, there's a good fire that will do their business. Business! said the inn-keeper, I hope you wou'd not burn my books. Only two of them, said the curate, this same Don Cirongilio and his friend Felixmarte. I hope, sir, said the host, they are neither hereticks nor flegmaticks. Schismaticks you mean, said the barber; I mean so, said the inn-keeper; and if you must burn any, let it be this of Gongalo Hernandez and Diego Garcia, for you should sooner burn one of my children than the others. These books, honest friend, said the curate, that you appear so concern'd for, are senseless rhapsodies of falsehoods and folly; and this which you so despise is a true history, and contains a true account of two celebrated men; the first by his bravery and courage purchas'd immortal fame, and the name of the great general, by the universal consent of mankind. The other, Diego Garcia de Paredes, was of noble extraction, and born in Truxillo a town of Estremadura, and was a man of singular courage, and such mighty strength, that with one of his hands he could stop a mill-wheel in its most rapid motion; and with his single force defended the passage of a bridge against a great army. Several other great actions are related in the memoirs of his life, but all with so much modesty and unbiass'd truth, that they easily pronounce him his own historiographer; and had they been written by any one else, with freedom and impartiality, they might have eclips'd your Hectors, Achilles's and Orlando's, with all their heroick exploits. That's a fine jest, faith, said the inn-keeper, my father could have told you another tale, Sir. Holding a mill-wheel? why, is that such a mighty matter! odds fish, do but turn over a leaf of Felixmarte there; you'll find how with one single back-stroke he cut five swingeing giants off by the middle, as if they had been so many bean-cods, of which the children make little  
puppet-

puppet-friars † ; and read how at another time he charg'd a most mighty and powerful army of above a million and six hundred thousand fighting men, all arm'd cap-a-pee, and routed them all like so many sheep. And what can you say of the worthy Cirongilio of Thrace ? who, as you may read there, going by water one day, was assaulted by a fiery serpent in the middle of the river ; he presently leap'd nimbly upon her back, and hanging by her scaly neck, grasp'd her throat fast with both his arms, so that the serpent finding herself almost strangl'd, was forc'd to dive into the water to save herself, and carry'd the knight, who would not quit his hold, to the very bottom, where he found a stately palace, and such pleasant gardens, that 'twas a wonder ; and straight the serpent turn'd into a very old man, and told him such things as were never heard nor spoken.—Now a fig for your great captain, and your Diego Garcia. Dorothea hearing this, said softly to Cardenio, that the host was capable of making a second part to Don Quixote. I think so too, cry'd Cardenio, for 'tis plain he believes every tittle contain'd in those books, nor can all the Carthusian friars in the world persuade him otherwise. I tell thee friend, (said the curate) there were never any such persons, as your books of chivalry mention, upon the face of the earth ; your Felixmarte of Hircania, and your Cirongilio of Thrace, are all but chimera's and fictions of idle and luxuriant wits, who wrote them for the same reason that you read them, because they had nothing else to do. “ Sir, “ (said the inn-keeper) you must angle with another

---

† *Children, in Spain, we are told, make puppets, resembling friars, out of bean-cods, by breaking as much of the upper end as to discover part of the first bean, which is to represent the bald head, and letting the broken cod hang back like a cow!*

“ bait,

"bait, or you'll catch no fish \*, I know what's what," as well as another; I can tell where my own shoe pinches me; and you must not think, sir, to catch old birds with chaff;" a pleasant jest, faith, that you should pretend to persuade me now that these notable books are lies and stories; why sir, are they not in print? are they not publish'd according to order? licens'd by authority from the privy-council? and do you think that they would permit so many untruths to be printed, and such a number of battles and enchantments to set us all a madding? I have told you already (friend) reply'd the curate, that this is licens'd for our amusement in our idle hours; for the same reason that tennis, billiards, chess, and other recreations are tolerated, that men may find a pastime for those hours they cannot find employment for. Neither could the government foresee this inconvenience from such books, that you urge, because they could not reasonably suppose any rational person would believe their absurdities. And were this a proper time, I could say a great deal in favour of such writings, and how with some regulations, they might be made both instructive and diverting; but I design, upon the first opportunity, to communicate my thoughts on this head to some that may redress it: in the mean time, honest landlord, you may put up your books, and believe them true if you please, and much good may do you. And I wish you may never halt of the same foot as your guest Don Quixote. There's no fear of that, said the inn-keeper, for I never design to turn knight-errant, because I find the customs that supported that noble order are quite out of doors.

---

\* *In the original, what's in italick runs thus, A otro perro con esse huefio, &c. i. e. To another dog, with this bone; as if I did not know how many make five, nor where my own shoe pinches; don't think, sir, to feed me with pap; for, before God, I'm no suckling.*



About the middle of their discourse enter'd Sancho, who was very uneasy at hearing that knights-errant were out of fashion, and books of chivalry full of nothing but folly and fiction; he resolv'd, however (in spite of all their contempt of chivalry) still to stick by his master; and if his intended expedition fail'd of success, then to return to his family and plough. As the inn-keeper was carrying away the books, the curate desir'd his leave to look over those manuscripts which appear'd in so fair a character; he reach'd them to him, to the number of eight sheets, on one of which there was written in a large hand, *The novel of the curious impertinent*. The title, said the curate, promises something, perhaps it may be worth reading through: your reverence, said the inn-keeper, may be worse employ'd; for that novel has receiv'd the approbation of several ingenious guests of mine who have read it, and who would have begg'd it of me; but I would by no means part with it, till I deliver it to the owner of this port-manteau, who left it here with these books and papers; I may perhaps, see him again, and restore them honestly; for I am as much a Christian as my neighbours, though I am an inn-keeper. But I hope (said the curate) if it pleases me you won't deny me a copy of it. Nay, as to that matter, said the host, we shan't fall out. Cardenio having by this perus'd it a little, recommended it to the curate, and intreated him to read it for the entertainment of the company. The curate wou'd have excus'd himself, by urging the unseasonable time of night, and that sleep was then more proper, especially for the lady; a pleasant story, said Dorothea, will prove the best repose for some hours to me; for my spirits are not compos'd enough to allow me to rest, tho' I want it. Mr. Nicholas and Sancho join'd in the request. To please ye then, and satisfy my own curiosity, said the curate, I'll begin, if you'll but give your attention.

## C H A P. VI.

*The novel of the curious impertinent.*

**A**Nselmo and Lothario, considerable gentlemen of Florence, the capital city of Tuscany in Italy, were so eminent for their friendship, that they were called nothing but the Two Friends. They were both young and unmarried, of the same age and humour, which did not a little concur to the continuance of their mutual affection, tho', of the two, Anselmo was the most amorously inclin'd, and Lothario the greater lover of hunting; yet they lov'd one another above all other considerations; and mutually quitted their own pleasure for their friend's; and their very wills, like the different motions of a well regulated watch, were always subservient to their unity, and still kept time with one another. Anselmo, at last, fell desperately in love with a beautiful lady of the same city; so eminent for her fortune and family, that he resolv'd, by the consent of his friend (for he did nothing without his advice) to demand her in marriage. Lothario was the person employ'd in this affair, which he manag'd with that address, that in few days he put his friend into possession of Camilla, for that was the lady's name; and this so much to their satisfaction, that he receiv'd a thousand acknowledgments from both, for the equal happiness they deriv'd from his endeavours. Lothario, as long as the nuptials lasted, was every day at Anselmo's, and did all he could to add to the sports and diversions of the occasion. But as soon as the new-marry'd pair had receiv'd the congratulation of their friends, and the nuptial ceremonies were over, Lothario retir'd, with the rest of their acquaintance, and forbore his visits, because he prudently imagin'd, that it was not at all proper to be so frequent at his friend's house after marriage as before; for tho' true friendship entirely banishes all suspicion and jealousy, yet the honour of a married man is of so nice and tender a nature, that it has been sometimes sully'd by the conversation of the nearest relations,

and

and therefore more liable to suffer from that of a friend. Anselmo observ'd this remissness of Lothario ; and, fond as he was of his wife, shew'd by his tender complaints how much it affected him. He told him, that if he could have believ'd he must also have left so dear a correspondence by marriage ; as much as he lov'd, he would never have paid so great a price for the satisfaction of his passion ; and that he would never for the idle reputation of a cautious husband, suffer so tender and agreeable a name to be lost, as that of *The Two Friends*, which before his marriage, they had so happily obtain'd, and therefore he begg'd him, if that were a term lawful to be us'd betwixt them two, to return to his former familiarity and freedom of conversation ; assuring him, that his wife's will and pleasure were entirely form'd by his ; and that being acquainted with their antient and strict friendship, she was equally surpriz'd at so unexpected a change. Lothario reply'd to these endearing persuasions of his friend, with such prudence and discretion, that he convinc'd him of the sincerity of his intentions in what he had done ; and so in conclusion they agreed that Lothario should dine twice a week at his house, besides holy-days. Yet Lothario's compliance with this resolution being only not to disoblige his friend, he design'd to observe it no farther than he should find it consistent with Anselmo's honour, whose reputation was as dear to him as his own ; and he us'd to tell him, that the husband of a beautiful wife ought to be as cautious of the friends whom he carry'd home to her himself, as other female acquaintance and visitants. For a friend's or relation's house often renders the contrivance of those things easy and not suspected, which could not be compass'd either in the church, the markets, or at publick entertainments and places of resort, which no man can entirely keep a woman from frequenting. To this Lothario said also, that every marry'd man ought to have some friend to put him in mind of the defects of his conduct ; for a husband's fondness many times makes him either not see, or at least, for fear of displeasing his wife, not command or forbid her  
what

what may be advantageous or prejudicial to his reputation. In all which, a friend's warning and advice might supply him with a proper remedy. But where shall we find a friend so qualify'd with wisdom and truth as Anselmo demands? I must confess I cannot tell, unless it were Lothario, whose care of his friend's honour made him so cautious as not to comply with his promis'd visiting days, lest the malicious observers should give a scandalous censure of the frequent admission of so well qualify'd a gentleman, both for his wit, fortune, youth and address, to the house of a lady of so celebrated a beauty as Camilla: for tho' his virtue was sufficiently known to check the growth of any malignant report, yet he would not suffer his friend's honour nor his own, to run the hazard of being call'd in question; which made him spend the greatest part of those days, he had by promise devoted to his friend's conversation in other places and employments; yet excusing his absence so agreeably, that Anselmo could not deny the reasonableness of what he alledg'd. And thus the time pass'd away in pathetick accusations of want of love and friendship on one side, and plausible excuses on the other.

I know very well, said Anselmo, walking one day in the fields with his friend, that of all the favours and benefits for which heaven commands my gratitude, as the advantage of my birth, fortune and nature; the greatest and most obliging is the gift of such a wife, and such a friend; being both of you pledges of so great value, that tho' 'tis impossible for me to raise my esteem and love equal to your deserts, yet is no man capable of having a greater. And yet while I am in possession of all that can or usually does make a man happy, I live the most discontented life in the world. I am not able to tell you when my misery began, which now inwardly torments me with so strange, extravagant, and singular a desire, that I never reflect on it, but I wonder at my self, and condemn and curb my folly, and would fain hide my desires even from my self: and yet I have receiv'd no more advantage from this private confusion, than if I had publish'd my extravagance to all the world. Since there-

therefore 'tis evident that it will at last break out, dear Lothario, I would have it go no farther than thy known fidelity and secrecy; for that and my own industry (which as my friend thou wilt turn to my assistance) will quickly, I hope, free me from the anguish it now gives me, and restore me that tranquillity of which my own folly has now depriv'd me.

Lothario stood in great suspense, unable to guess at the consequence of so strange and prolix an introduction. In vain he rack'd his imagination for the causes of his friend's affliction, the truth was the last thing he cou'd think of; but no longer to remain in doubt, he told Anselmo, that he did his friendship a particular injury, in not coming directly to the point in the discovery of his thoughts to him, since his counsels might enable him to support, and, perhaps, to lose or compass such importunate desires.

'Tis very true, reply'd Anselmo, and with that assurance I must inform you, that the desire that gives me so much pain, is to know whether Camilla be really as virtuous as I think her. Nor can this be made evident but by such a trial, that, like gold by the fire, the standard and degree of her worth be discover'd. For, in my opinion, no woman has more virtue than she retains, after the force of the most earnest solicitations. *Castæ est quam nemo rogavit* †: and she only may be said to be chaste, who has withstood the force of tears, vows, promises, gifts, and all the importunities of a lover that is not easily deny'd: for where's the praise of a woman's virtue whom no body has ever endeavour'd to corrupt? Where is the wonder if a wife be reserv'd, when she has no temptation nor opportunity of being otherwise, especially if she have a jealous husband, with whom the least suspicion goes for a reality, and who therefore punishes the least appearance with death. Now I can never so much esteem her who owes her virtue merely to fear of

---

† *The nymph may be chaste that has never been try'd.*



want of opportunity of being false, as I would one who victoriously surmounts all the assaults of a vigorous and watchful lover, and yet retains her virtue intire and unshaken. These, and many other reasons, which I could urge to strengthen my opinion, make me desire that my Camilla's virtue may pass through the fiery trial of vigorous sollicitations and addressees, and these offer'd by a gallant, who may have merit enough to deserve her good opinion; and if, as I am confident she will, she be able to resist so agreeable a temptation, I shall think my self the most happy man in the world, and attain to the height and utmost aim of my desires, and shall say, that a virtuous woman is fallen to my lot, of whom the wise man says, who can find her? If she yields, I shall, at least, have the satisfaction of finding my opinion of women justify'd; and not be impos'd on by a foolish confidence, that abuses most men; which consideration will be sufficient to make me support the grief I shall derive from so expensive an experiment. And assuring my self, that nothing which you can say can dissuade me from my resolution, I desire that you your self, my dear friend, would be the person to put my design in execution. I will furnish you with opportunities enough of making your addressees, in which I would have you omit nothing you may suppose likely to prevail with, and work upon a woman of quality, who is modest, virtuous, reserv'd, and discreet by nature. The most prevailing reason that makes me choose you for this affair above all others, is, because if she should prove so frail, as to be overcome by addressees and importunities, the victory will not cost me so dear, since I am secur'd from your taking that advantage, of which another might make no scruple. And so my honour will remain untouch'd, and the intended injury a secret, in the virtue of thy silence; for I know my friend so well, that death and the grave will as soon divulge my affairs. Wherefore if you would give me life indeed, and deliver me from the most perplexing torment of doubt, you will immediately begin this amorous assault, with

with all that warmth, assiduity, and courage, I expect from that confidence I put in your friendship.

Lothario gave so great an attention to Anselmo's reasons, that he gave him no other interruption, than what we mention'd. But, now finding his discourse was at an end, full of amazement at the extravagance of the proposal, he thus reply'd, could I, my dear Anselmo, persuade my self that what you have said were any more than a piece of raillery, I should not have been so long silent; no, I should have interrupted you at the beginning of your speech. Sure you know neither your self nor me, Anselmo, or you would never have employ'd me on such an affair, if you had not thought me as much alter'd from what I was, as you seem to be; for as the poet has it, *usque ad aras*; a true friend ought to desire nothing of his friend that is offensive to heaven. But should a man so far exert his friendship, as to deviate a little from the severity of religion, in compliance to his friend, no trifling motives can excuse the transgression, but such only as concern, at least, his friend's life and honour. Which therefore of these, Anselmo, is in danger, to warrant my undertaking so detestable a thing as you desire? Neither, I dare engage: on the contrary, you would make me the assaulter of both, in which my own is included; for to rob you of your reputation, is to take away your life, since an infamous life is worse than death; and by making me the guilty instrument of this, as you would have me, you make me worse than a dead man, by the murder of my reputation. Therefore I desire you would hear with patience what I have to urge against your extravagant desire, and I shall afterwards hear your reply, without interruption. Anselmo having promis'd his attention, Lothario proceeded in this manner. In my opinion, you are not unlike the Moors, who are incapable of being convinc'd of the error of their religion, by scripture, speculative reasons, or those drawn immediately from the articles of our faith; and will yield to nothing but demonstrations, as evident as those of the mathematicks, and which can as little be deny'd, as when we say, if from two equal

parts, we take away two equal parts, the parts that remain are also equal. And when they do not understand this proposition, which they seldom do, we are oblig'd by operation, to make it yet more plain and obvious to their senses : and yet all this labour will at last prove ineffectual to the convincing them of the verities of our religion. The same must be my method with you, since your strange desire is so very foreign to all manner of reason, that I very much fear I shall spend my time and labour in vain, in endeavouring to convince you of your own folly, for I can afford it no other name. Nay, did I not love you as I do, I should leave you to the prosecution of your own odd humour, which certainly tends to your ruin. But to lay your folly a little more open, you bid me, Anselmo, attempt a woman of honour, cautious of her reputation, and one who is not much inclin'd to love ; for all these good qualifications you allow'd her. If therefore you already know your wife is possess'd of all these advantages of prudence, discretion, honour, and reservedness, what have you more to enquire after ? And if you believe, as I my self do, that she will be impregnable to all my assaults ; what greater and better names will you give her, than she already deserves ? Either you pretend to think better of her, than really you do, or else you desire you know not what your self. But then if you do not believe her as virtuous as you pretend, why would you put it to the trial, why do you not rather use her as you think she deserves ? On the other hand, if she be as good as you profess you believe her, why would you go to tempt truth and goodness it self, without any reasonable prospect of advantage ? For when the trial is over, she will be but the same virtuous woman she was before. Wherefore 'tis allow'd that it is the effect of temerity, and want of reason, to attempt what is likely to produce nothing but danger and detriment to the undertaker, especially, when there is no necessity for it, and when we may easily foresee the folly of the undertaking. There are but these motives to incite us to difficult attempts, religion, interest, or both together. The first makes the saints endeavour to lead  
angelick

angelick  
us exp  
travels  
pounde  
honour  
terests  
liant  
prince  
a drea  
the d  
every  
bring  
them  
exper  
heave  
answ  
ther  
appo  
man  
know  
fider  
ply  
the  
Luc  
ter

“

“

“

“

“

“

angelick lives in these frail bodies. The second makes us expose ourselves to the hazards of long voyages and travels in pursuit of riches. The third motive is compounded of both, and prompts us to act as well for the honour of God, as for our own particular glory and interests; as for example, the daring adventures of the valiant soldier, who, urg'd by his duty to God, his prince, and his country, fiercely runs into the midst of a dreadful breach, unterrify'd with any considerations of the danger that threatens him. These are things done every day, and let them be never so dangerous, they bring honour, glory, and profit, to those that attempt them. But by the project you design to reduce to an experiment, you will never obtain either the glory of heaven, profit or reputation: for should the experiment answer your expectation, it will make no addition, either to your content, honour, or riches; but if it disappoint your hopes, it makes you the most miserable man alive. And the imaginary advantage of no man's knowing your disgrace will soon vanish, when you consider, that to know it your self, will be enough to supply you perpetually with all the tormenting thoughts in the world. A proof of this is what the famous poet Ludovico Tanfilo, at the end of his first part of † *St. Peter's tears*, says, in these words:

" Shame, grief, remorse in Peter's breast increase,

" Soon as the blushing morn his crime betrays.

" When most unseen, then most himself he sees,

" And with due horror all his soul surveys,

" For a great spirit needs no cens'ring eyes

" To wound his soul, when conscious of a fault;

" But self-condemn'd and e'en self-punish'd lies,

" And dreads no witness like upbraiding thought,

---

† *This poem, written originally in Italian, is translated into Spanish by Juan Sedeno, and into French by Malherbe.*

So that your boasted secrecy, far from alleviating your grief, will only serve to increase it: and if your eyes do not express it by outward tears, they will flow from your very heart in blood. So wept that simple doctor, who, as our poet tells us, made that experiment on the brittle vessel, which the more prudent Reynoldus excus'd himself from doing. This, indeed, is but a poetical fiction, but yet the moral which it enforces is worthy being observ'd and imitated. And accordingly I hope you will discover the strange mistake into which you would run, principally when you have heard what I have farther to say to you.

Suppose, Anselmo, you had a diamond, as valuable, in the judgment of the best jewellers, as such a stone could be, would you not be satisfy'd with their opinion, without trying its hardness on the anvil? You must own, that should it be proof against your blows, it would not be one jot the more valuable than really it was before your foolish trial; but should it happen to break, as well it might, the jewel was then entirely lost, as well as the sense and reputation of the owner. This precious diamond, my friend, is your Camilla, for so she ought to be esteemed in all men's opinions as well as your own; why then would you imprudently put her in danger of falling, since your trial will add no greater value to her than she has already? but if she should prove frail, reflect with yourself on the unhappiness of your condition, and how justly you might complain of your being the cause of both her ruin and your own. Consider, that as a modest and honest woman is the most valuable jewel in the world, so all women's virtue and honour consist in the opinion and reputation they maintain with other people, and since that of your wife is perfect, both in your own and all other men's opinion, why will you go, to no purpose, to call the reality of it in question? you must remember, my friend, that the nature of women is, at best, but weak and imperfect; and for that reason we should be so far from casting rubs in its way, that we ought, with all imaginable care, to  
remove



remove every appearance that might hinder its course to that perfection it wants, which is virtue.

If you believe the naturalists, the Ermine is a very white little creature ; when the hunters have found its haunts, they surround it almost with dirt and mire, toward which the Ermine being forc'd to fly, rather than sully its native white with dirt, it suffers itself to be taken, preferring its colour to its liberty and life. The virtuous woman is our Ermine, whose chastity is whiter than snow ; but to preserve its colour unsully'd, you must observe just a contrary method : The addresses and services of an importunate lover, are the mire into which you should never drive a woman ; for 'tis ten to one she will not be able to free her self and avoid it, being but too apt to stumble into it ; and therefore that should be always remov'd, and only the candour and beauty of virtue, and the charms of a good fame and reputation plac'd before her. A good woman is also not unlike a mirror of crystal, which will infallibly be dimm'd and stain'd by breathing too much upon it : she must rather be us'd like the reliques of saints, ador'd but not touch'd ; or like a garden of curious tender flowers, that may at a distance gratify the eye, but are not permitted by the master to be trampled on or touch'd by every beholder. I shall add but a few verses out of a late new play, very fit for our present purpose, where a prudent old man advis'd his neighbour, that had a daughter, to lock her up close ; and gives these reasons for it, besides several others :

- " Since nothing is frailer than woman and glass,
- " He that wou'd expose 'em to fall is an ass ;
- " And sure the rash mortal is yet more unwise,
- " Who on bodies so ticklish experiments tries.
- " With ease both are damag'd ; then keep that with  
" care
- " Which no art can restore, nor no soder repair.
- " Fond man take my counsel, watch what is so frail ;
- " For, where Danaes lie, golden show'rs will pre-  
vail,

All I have hitherto urg'd relates only to you, I may now at last be allow'd to consider what regards my self; and if I am tedious I hope you will pardon me; for to draw you out of the labyrinth into which you have run yourself, I am forc'd on that prolixity: you call me friend, yet, which is absolutely inconsistent with friendship, you would rob me of my honour; nay, you stop not here, but would oblige me to destroy yours. First, that you would rob me of mine is evident; for what will Camilla think, when I make a declaration of love to her, but that I am a perfidious villain, that makes no scruple of violating the most sacred laws of friendship, and who sacrifice the honour and reputation of my friend to a criminal passion: secondly, that I destroy yours is as evident; for when she sees me take such a liberty with her, she will imagine that I have discovered some weakness in her, that has given me assurance to make her so guilty a discovery, by which she esteeming herself injur'd in her honour, you being the principal part of her, must of necessity be affected with the affronts she receives. For this is the reason why the husband, though never so deserving, cautious and careful, suffers, the infamy of a scandalous name if his wife goes astray; whereas in reason he ought rather to be an object of compassion than contempt, seeing the misfortune proceeds from the vice and folly of the wife, not his own defects. But since the reason and justice of the man's suffering for the wife's transgression may be serviceable to you, I'll give you the best account of it I can; and pray do not think me tedious, since this is meant for your good. When woman was given to man, and marriage first ordain'd in paradise, man and wife were made and pronounc'd one flesh; the husband therefore being of a piece with the wife, whatever affects her affects him, as a part of her; tho', as I have said, he has been no occasion of it: for as the whole body is affected by the pain of any part, as the head will share the pain of the foot, tho' it never caus'd that pain, so is the husband touch'd with his wife's infamy, because she is part of him. And since all wordly honours and dishonours are

deriv'd

deriv'd from flesh and blood, and the scandalous baseness of an unfaithful wife proceeds from the same principle, it necessarily follows, that the husband, tho' no party in the offence, and intirely ignorant and innocent of it, must have his share of the infamy. Let what I have said, my dear Anselmo, make you sensible of the danger into which you would run, by endeavouring thus to disturb the happy tranquillity and repose that your wife at present enjoys; and for how vain a curiosity, and extravagant a caprice, you would rouse and awake those peccant humours which are now lull'd asleep by the power of an unattempted chastity. Reflect farther, how small a return you can expect from so hazardous a voyage, and such valuable commodities as you venture; for the treasure you will lose is so great, and ought to be so dear, that all words are too inexpressive to shew how much you ought to esteem it. But if all I have said be too weak to destroy your foolish resolve, employ some other instrument of your disgrace and ruin: for, tho' I should lose your friendship, a loss which I must esteem the greatest in the world, I will have no hand in an affair so prejudicial to your honour.

Lothario said no more, and Anselmo discovering a desponding melancholy in his face, remain'd a great while silent and confounded. At last, I have, said he, my friend, listen'd to your discourse, as you might observe, with all the attention in nature, and every part of what you have said convinces me of the greatness of your wisdom and friendship; and I must own, that if I suffer my desires to prevail over your reasons, I shun the good and pursue the evil. But yet, my friend, you ought, on the other side, to reflect, that my distemper is not much unlike that of those women, who sometimes long for coals, lime, nay, some things that are loathsome to the very sight; and therefore some little arts should be us'd to endeavour my cure, which might easily be affected, if you would but consent to solicit Camilla, though it were but weakly and remissly; for I am sure she will not be so frail to surrender at the first assault, which yet will be sufficient to give me the satisfaction I  
desire;

desire; and in this you will fulfil the duty of our friendship, in restoring me to life, and securing my honour, by your powerful and perswasive reasons. And you are indeed bound as my friend to do thus much to secure me from betraying my defects and follies to a stranger, which would hazard that reputation, which you have taken so much pains to preserve; since I am so bent on this experiment, that if you refuse me, I shall certainly apply my self elsewhere: and though a while your reputation may suffer in Camilla's opinion, yet when she has once prov'd triumphant, you may cure that wound, and recover her good opinion, by a sincere discovery of your design. Wherefore I conjure you to comply with my importunity, in spite of all the obstacles that may present themselves to you, since what I desire is so little, and the pleasure I shall derive from it so great, for as I have promis'd, your very first attempt shall satisfy me as much as if you had gone through the whole experiment.

Lothario plainly saw that Anselmo's resolution was too much fix'd for any thing he cou'd say to alter it, and finding that he threatn'd to betray his folly to a stranger, if he persisted in a refusal; to avoid greater inconveniencies, he resolv'd to seem to comply with his desires, privately designing to satisfy Anselmo's caprice, without giving Camilla any trouble; and therefore he desir'd him to break the matter to no body else, since he would himself undertake it, and begin as soon as he pleas'd. Anselmo embrac'd him with all the love and tenderness imaginable, and was as prodigal of his thanks, as if the very promise had been the greatest obligation that could be laid on him. They immediately agreed on the next day for the trial, at which time Anselmo should give him the opportunity of being alone with her, and gold and jewels to present her with. He advis'd him to omit no point of gallantry, as serenades and songs, and verses in her praise; offering to make 'em himself, if Lothario would not be at the trouble. But Lothario promis'd him to do all himself, tho' his design was far different from Anselmo's.

Matters

Matters being thus adjusted, they return'd to Anselmo's house, where they found the beautiful Camilla sad with concern for the absence of her husband beyond his usual hour. Lothario left him there, and retir'd home, as pensive how to come off handsomely in this ridiculous affair, as he had left Anselmo pleas'd and contented with his undertaking it. But that night, he contriv'd a way of imposing on Anselmo to his satisfaction, without offending Camilla. So next day he goes to Anselmo's, and was receiv'd by Camilla with a civility and respect answerable to the uncommon friendship she knew was between him and her husband. Dinner being over, Anselmo desir'd his friend to keep his lady company till his return from an extraordinary affair, that would require his absence about an hour and half. Camilla desir'd him not to go; Lothario offer'd to go with him; but he pleaded peculiar business, intreated his friend to stay, and injoin'd his wife not to leave him alone till his return. In short, he knew so well how to counterfeit a necessity for his absence, tho' that necessity proceeded only from his own folly, that no one cou'd perceive it was feign'd. And so he left them together, without any one to observe their actions, all the servants being retir'd to dinner.

Thus Lothario found himself enter'd the lists, his adversary before him terribly arm'd with a thousand piercing beauties, sufficient to overcome all the men she should encounter, which gave him cause enough to fear his own fate. The first thing he did in this first onset, was to lean his head carelessly on his hand, and beg her leave to take a nap in his chair, till his friend came back: Camilla told him she thought he might rest with more ease on the couch \* in the next room; he declar'd him-

---

\* Estrado. *A space of the visiting-rooms of ladies, rais'd a foot above the floor of the rest of the room, cover'd with carpets or mats, on which the ladies sit on cushions laid along by the wall, or low stools.*



self satisfy'd with the place where he was, and so slept till his friend came back. Anselmo finding his wife in her chamber, and Lothario asleep at his return, concluded that he had given them time enough both for discourse, and repose ; and therefore waited with a great deal of impatience for his friend's awaking, that they might retire, and he might acquaint him with his success. Lothario at last awak'd, and going out with his friend, he answer'd his enquiry to this purpose, that he did not think it convenient to proceed farther, at that time, than some general praise of her wit and beauty, which would best prepare his way for what he might do hereafter, and dispose her to give a more easy and willing ear to what he should say to her : As the devil, by laying a pleasing and apparent good at first before us, insinuates himself into our inclinations so that he generally gains his point before we discover the cloven foot, if his disguise pass on us in the beginning. Anselmo was extremely satisfy'd with what Lothario said, and promis'd him every day as good an opportunity ; and tho' he could not go every day abroad, yet he would manage his conduct so well, that Camilla should have no cause of suspicion. He took care to do as he said. But Lothario wilfully lost the frequent opportunities he gave him ; however, he sooth'd him still with assurances, that his lady was inflexible, her virtue not to be surmounted, and that she had threatned to discover his attempts to her husband, if ever he presum'd to be so insolent again ; so far was she from giving the least hope or encouragement. Thus far 'tis well, said Anselmo, but yet Camilla has resisted nothing but words, we must now see what proof she is against more substantial temptations. To morrow I will furnish you with two thousand crowns in gold, to present her with ; and as a farther bait, you shall have as much more for jewels. For women, especially if they are handsome, naturally love to go gayly and richly dress'd, be they never so chaste and virtuous ; and if she have power to overcome this temptation, I'll give you no farther trouble. Since I have begun this adventure, reply'd Lothario, I will make an end of it, tho'

tho' I am sure her repulses will tire out my patience and her virtue overcome any temptation, and baffle my endeavours.

The next day Anselmo deliver'd him the four thousand crowns, and with them as many perplexing thoughts, not knowing how to supply his invention with some new story to amuse his friend. However at last he resolv'd to return the money, with assurance that Camilla was as unmov'd with presents, as with praise, and as untouch'd with promises as with vows and sighs of Love; and therefore all farther attempts wou'd be but a fruitless labour. This was his intention; but fortune that meddl'd too much in these affairs disappointed his designs. For Anselmo having left him alone with his wife one day as he us'd to do, privately convey'd himself into the closet, and thro' the chinks of the door set himself to observe what they did; he found that for one half hour Lothario said not one word to Camilla, from whence he concluded that all the addresses, importunities and repulses, with which he had amus'd him were pure fictions. But, that he might be fully satisfy'd in the truth of his surmise, coming from his covert he took his friend aside, and enquired of him what Camilla had then said to him, and how he now found her inclin'd? Lothario reply'd, that he would make no farther trial of her, since her answer had now been so severe and awful, that he durst not for the future venture upon a discourse so evidently her aversion.

Ah! Lothario, Lothario! cry'd Anselmo, is it thus that you keep your promises? is this what I should expect from your friendship? I observ'd you through that door, and found that you said not a word to Camilla; and from thence I am very well satisfy'd, that you have only impos'd on me all the answers and relations you have made. Why did you hinder me from employing some other, if you never intended to satisfy my desire? Anselmo said no more, but this was enough to confound Lothario, and cover him with shame for being found in a lye. Therefore to appease his friend, he swore to him, from that time forward, to set in good earnest about the

matter, and that so effectually, that he himself, if he wou'd again give himself the trouble of observing him, should find proof enough of his sincerity. Anselmo believ'd him; and to give him the better opportunity, he engag'd a friend of his to send for him, with a great deal of importunity, to come to his house at a village near the city, where he meant to spend eight days, to take away all apprehension and fear from both his friend and his wife.

Was ever man so unhappy as Anselmo, who industriously contriv'd the plot of his own ruin and dishonour? he had a very good wife, and possess'd her in quiet, without any other man's mingling in his pleasures; her thoughts were bounded with her own house, and her husband, the only earthly good she hoped or thought on, and her only pleasure and desire; his will the rule of hers, and measure of her conduct. When he possess'd love, honour, beauty and discretion, without pain or toil, what shou'd provoke him to seek with so much danger and hazard of what he had already, that which was not to be found in nature! he that aims at things impossible, ought justly to lose those advantages which are within the bounds of possibility, as the poet sings:

## I.

- " In death I seek for life,
- " In a disease for health,
- " For quietness in strife,
- " In poverty for wealth,
- " And constant truth in an inconstant wife.

## II.

- " But sure the fates disdain
- " My mad desires to please,
- " Nor shall I e'er obtain
- " What others get with ease,
- " Since I demand what no man e'er cou'd gain.

The next day Anselmo went out of town; having first inform'd Camilla, that his friend Lothario would look  
after

after  
and  
His  
how  
place  
her  
this  
had  
matt  
dispu  
that  
short  
day,  
coul  
with  
to b  
her  
she  
fath  
L  
with  
the  
Cam  
mig  
who  
agre  
usua  
not  
man  
than  
hav  
mill  
than  
he f  
emp  
so  
soft  
file  
lov  
min

after his affairs, and keep her company in his absence, and desir'd her to make as much of him as of himself. His lady, like a discreet woman, begg'd him to consider how improper a thing it was for any other to take his place in his absence; and told him, that if he doubted her ability in managing her house, he should try her but this time, and she question'd not but he would find she had capacity to acquit herself to his satisfaction in greater matters. Anselmo reply'd, that it was her duty not to dispute, but obey his command: to which she return'd, that she would comply, tho' much against her will. In short, her husband left the town: Lothario, the next day, was receiv'd at her house with all the respect that could be paid a friend so dear to her husband; but yet with so much caution, that she never permitted herself to be left alone with him, but kept perpetually some of her maids in the room, and chiefly Leonela, for whom she had a particular love, as having been bred in her father's house with her from her infancy.

Lothario said nothing to her the three first days, notwithstanding he might have found an opportunity when the servants were gone to dinner; for tho' the prudent Camilla had order'd Leonela to dine before her, that she might have no occasion to go out of the room; yet she, who had other affairs to employ her thoughts, more agreeable to her inclinations (to gratify which that was usually the only convenient time she could find) was not so very punctually obedient to her lady's commands, but that she sometimes left them together. Lothario did not yet make use of these advantages, as I have said, being aw'd by the virtue and modesty of Camilla. But this silence which she thus impos'd on Lothario, had at last a quite contrary effect. For though he said nothing, his thoughts were active, his eyes were employ'd to see and survey the outward charms of a form so perfect, that 'twas enough to fire the most cold, and soften the most obdurate heart. In these intervals of silence, he consider'd how much she deserv'd to be lov'd; and these considerations by little and little undermin'd and assaulted the faith which he ow'd to his friend.

A thousand times he resolv'd to leave the city and retire where Anselmo should never see him, and where he should never more behold the dangerous face of Camilla; but the extreme pleasure he found in seeing her, soon destroy'd so feeble a resolve. When he was alone he wou'd accuse his want of friendship and religion, and run into frequent comparisons betwixt himself and Anselmo, which generally concluded that Anselmo's folly and madness was greater than his breach of faith; and that, wou'd heaven as easily excuse his intentions as man, he had no cause to fear any punishment for the crime he was going to commit. In fine, Camilla's beauty, and the opportunity given him by the husband himself, wholly vanquish'd his faith and friendship. And now having an eye only to the means of obtaining that pleasure, to which he was prompted with so much violence; after he had spent the three first days of Anselmo's absence, in a conflict betwixt love and virtue, he attempted, by all means possible, to prevail with Camilla, and discover'd so much passion in his words and actions, that Camilla, surpriz'd with the unexpected assault, flung from him out of the room, and retir'd with haste to her chamber. Hope is always born with love, nor did this repulse in the least discourage Lothario from farther attempts on Camilla, who by this appear'd more charming, and more worthy his pursuit. She, on the other hand, knew not what to do upon the discovery of that in Lothario, which she never cou'd have imagin'd. The result of her reflections was this, that since she cou'd not give him any opportunity of speaking to her again, without the hazard of her reputation and honour, she wou'd send a letter to her husband to solicit his return to his house. The letter she sent by a messenger that very night; and it was to this purpose.





C H A P. VII.

*In which the history of the Curious Impertinent is pursued*

“ **A** S ’tis very improper to leave an army without a  
 “ general, and a garrison without its governor ; so  
 “ to me it seems much more imprudent to leave a young  
 “ marry’d woman without her husband ; especially when  
 “ there are no affairs of consequence to plead for his  
 “ absence. I find my self so ill in your’s, and so-im-  
 “ patient, and unable to endure it any longer, that if you  
 “ come not home very quickly, I shall be oblig’d to  
 “ return to my father’s, tho’ I leave your house with-  
 “ out any one to look after it : for the person to whom  
 “ you have intrusted the care of your family, [has, I  
 “ believe, more regard to his own pleasure than your  
 “ concerns. You are wise and prudent, and therefore I  
 “ shall say no more, nor is it convenient I shou’d.

Anselmo was not a little satisfy’d at the receipt of this letter, which assur’d him that Lothario had begun the attempt, which she had repell’d according to his hopes ; and therefore he sent her word not to leave his house, assuring her it shou’d not be long before he return’d. Camilla was surpriz’d with his answer, and more perplex’d than before, being equally afraid of going to her father, and of staying at home ; in the first she disobey’d her husband, in the latter ran the risque of her honour. The worst resolution prevail’d, which was to stay at her own house, and not avoid Lothario’s company, lest it shou’d give some cause of suspicion to her servants. And now she repented her writing to Anselmo, lest he shou’d suspect that Lothario had observ’d some indiscretion in her, that made him lose the respect due to her, and gave him assurance to offer at the corrupting her virtue : but confiding in heaven and her own innocence, which she thought proof against all Lothario’s attempts, she resolv’d to make no answer to whatever he should say to

her, and never more to trouble her husband with complaints, for fear of engaging him in disputes and quarrels with his friend. For that reason she consider'd how she might best excuse him to Anselmo, when he shou'd examine the cause of her writing to him in that manner. With a resolution so innocent and dangerous, the next day she gave ear to all that Lothario said : and he gave the assault with such force and vigour, that Camilla's constancy could not stand the shock unmov'd, and her virtue cou'd do no more than guard her eyes from betraying that tender compassion, of which his vows and intreaties, and all his sighs and tears had made her heart sensible. Lothario discover'd this with an infinite satisfaction, and no less addition to his flame ; and found that he ought to make use of this opportunity of Anselmo's absence, with all his force and importunity, to win so valuable a fortress. He began with the powerful battery of the praise of her beauty, which being directly pointed on the weakest part of woman, her vanity, with the greatest ease and facility in the world makes a breach as great as a lover wou'd desire. Lothario was not unskillful or remiss in the attack, but follow'd his fire so close, that let Camilla's integrity be built on never so obdurate a rock, it must at last have fall'n. He wept, pray'd, flatter'd, promis'd, swore, vow'd, and shew'd so much passion and truth in what he said, that beating down the care of her honour, he, at last, triumph'd over what he scarce durst hope, tho' what he most of all desir'd ; for she, at last, surrender'd, even Camilla surrender'd. Nor ought we to wonder if she yielded, since even Lothario's friendship and virtue were not able to withstand the terrible assault ; an evident proof that love is a power too strong to be overcome by any thing but flying, and that no mortal creature ought to be so presumptuous as to stand the encounter, since there is need of something more than human, and indeed a heavenly force, to confront and vanquish that human passion. Leonela was the only confident of this amour, which these new lovers and faithless friends could not by any means conceal from her knowledge. Lothario would not discover

to

to Camilla, that her husband, for her trial, had designedly given him this opportunity, to which he ow'd so extreme a happiness ; because she shou'd not think he wanted love to solicit her himself with importunity, or that she was gain'd on too easy terms.

Anselmo came home in a few days, but discover'd not what he had lost, tho' it was what he most valu'd and esteem'd : from thence he went to Lothario, and embracing him, begg'd of him to let him know his fate. All I can tell you, my friend, answer'd Lothario, is that you may boast yourself of the best wife in the world, the ornament of her sex, and the pattern which all virtuous women ought to follow. Words, offers, presents, all is ineffectual, the tears I pretended to shed, mov'd only her laughter. Camilla is not only mistress of the greatest beauty, but of modesty, discretion, sweetness of temper, and every other virtue and perfection that add to the charms of a woman of honour. Therefore, my friend, here take back your money, I have had no occasion to lay it out, for Camilla's integrity cannot be corrupted by such base and mercenary things as gifts and promises. And now, Anselmo, be at last content with the trial you have already made ; and having so luckily got over the dangerous quick-sands of doubts and suspicions that are to be met with in the ocean of matrimony, do not venture out again, with another pilot, that vessel, whose strength you have sufficiently experienc'd ; but believe yourself, as you are, securely anchor'd in a safe harbour, at pleasure and ease, till death, from whose force, no title, power, nor dignity can secure us, does come and cut the cable. Anselmo was extremely satisfy'd with Lothario's discourse, and believ'd it as firmly as if it had been an oracle ; yet desir'd him to continue his pursuit, if it were but to pass away the time : he did not require he shou'd press Camilla with those importunities he had before us'd, but only make some verses in her praise, under the name of Cloris ; and he would make Camilla believe he celebrated a lady he lov'd, under that name, to secure her honour and reputation from the censure which a more open

open declaration would expose her to : he added, that if Lothario would not be at the expence of so much trouble and time, as to compose them himself, he would do it for him with a great deal of pleasure. Lothario told him there was no need of that, since he himself was sometimes poetically given ; do you but tell Camilla of my pretended love, as you say you will, and I'll make the verses as well as I can, tho' not so well as the excellency of the subject requires. The curious impertinent, and his treacherous friend, having thus agreed the matter, Anselmo went home, and then ask'd Camilla on what occasion she sent him the letter ? Camilla, who wonder'd that this question had not been ask'd her before, reply'd, that the motive that prevail'd with her to write in that manner to him, was a jealousy she had entertain'd, that Lothario, in his absence, look'd on her with more criminal and desiring eyes than he us'd to do when he was at home ; but that since she had reason to believe that suspicion but weakly grounded, seeing he discover'd rather an aversion than love, as avoiding all occasions of being alone with her. Anselmo told her she had nothing to apprehend from Lothario on that account, since he knew his affections engag'd on one of the noblest young ladies of the city, whose praise he writ under the name of Cloris ; but were he not thus engag'd, there was no reason to suspect Lothario's virtue and friendship. Camilla, at this discourse, without doubt, would have been very jealous of Lothario, had he not told her his design of abusing her husband, with the pretence of another love, that he might, with the greater liberty and security, express her praise and his passion. The next day, at dinner, Anselmo desir'd him to read some of the verses he had made on his belov'd Cloris ; telling him, he might say any thing of her before Camilla, since she did not know who the lady was. Did Camilla know her, reply'd Lothario, that should not make me pass over in silence any part of that praise which was her due ; for if a lover complains of his mistress's cruelty, while he is praising her perfections, she can never suffer in her reputation. Therefore, with-

out

out any fear, I shall repeat a sonnet which I made yesterday on the ingratitude of Cloris.

A S O N N E T.

“ **A**T dead of night, when ev’ry troubled breast  
 “ By balmy sleep is eas’d of anxious pain,  
 “ When slaves themselves, in pleasing dreams are blest,  
 “ Of heaven and Cloris, restless I complain.

“ The rosy morn dispels the shades of night,  
 “ The sun, the pleasures, and the day return ;  
 “ All nature’s chear’d with the reviving light ;  
 “ I, only I, can never cease to mourn.

“ At noon, in vain, I bid my sorrow cease,  
 “ The heat increaseth, and my pains increase,  
 “ And still my soul in the mild evening grieves :  
 “ The night returns, and my complaints renew,  
 “ No moment sees me free ; in vain I sue,  
 “ Heav’n n’er relents, and Cloris ne’er relieves.

Camilla, was mightily pleas’d with the sonnet, but Anselmo transported ; he was lavish of his commendation, and added that the lady must be barbarously cruel that made no return to so much truth, and so violent a passion. What, must we then believe all that a poet in love tells us for truth ? said Camilla. Madam, reply’d Lothario, tho’ the poet may exceed, yet the lover corrects his fondness for fiction, and makes him speak truth. Anselmo, to advance Lothario’s credit with Camilla, confirm’d whatever he said ; but she not minding her husband’s confirmations, was sufficiently persuaded, by her passion for Lothario, to an implicit faith in all he said ; and therefore pleas’d with this composition, and more satisfy’d in the knowledge she had that all was address’d to herself, as the true Cloris, she desir’d him to repeat some other verses he had made on that subject, if he could remember any. I remember some,  
 reply’d



reply'd Lothario ; but madam, in my opinion, they are not so tolerable as the former ; but you shall be judge yourself.

## A S O N N E T.

## I.

“ **I** Die your victim, cruel fair ;  
 “ And die without reprieve,  
 “ If you can think your slave can bear  
 “ Your cruelty, and live.

## II.

“ Since all my hopes of ease are vain,  
 “ To die I now submit ;  
 “ And that you may not think I feign ;  
 “ It must be at your feet.

## III.

“ Yet when my bleeding heart you view,  
 “ Bright nymph, forbear to grieve ;  
 “ For I had rather die for you,  
 “ Than for another live.

## IV.

“ In death and dark oblivion's grave,  
 “ Oh ! let me lie forlorn,  
 “ For my poor ghost wou'd pine and rave,  
 “ Shou'd you relent and mourn.

Anselmo was not less profuse in his praise of this sonnet, than he had been of the other, and so added new fuel to the fire that was to consume his reputation. He contributed to his own abuse, in commending his false friend's attempts on his honour, as the most important service he could do it ; and this made him believe, that every step Camilla made down to contempt and disgrace, was a degree she mounted towards that perfection of virtue which he desir'd she should attain.

Some

Some time after, Camilla being alone with her maid, I am asham'd, said she, my Leonela, that I gave Lothario so easy a conquest over me, and did not know my own worth enough to make him undergo some greater fatigues, before I made him so entire a surrender. I am afraid he will think my hasty consent the effect of the looseness of my temper, and not at all consider that the force and violence be us'd, depriv'd me of the power of resisting. Ah ! madam, return'd Leonela, let not that disquiet you ; for the speedy bestowing a benefit of an intrinsic value, and which you design to bestow at last, can never lessen the favour ; for according to the old proverb, He that gives quickly gives twice. To answer your proverb with another, reply'd Camilla, That which cost little is less valued. But this has nothing to do with you, answer'd Leonela, since 'tis said of love that it sometimes goes, sometimes flies ; runs with one, walks gravely with another ; turns a third into ice, and sets a fourth in a flame : it wounds one, another it kills : like lightning it begins and ends in the same moment : it makes that fort yield at night which it besieg'd but in the morning ; for there is no force able to resist it. Since this is evident, what cause have you to be surpriz'd at your own frailty ? And why shou'd you apprehend any thing from Lothario, who has felt the same irresistible power, and yielded to it as soon ? For love, to gain a conquest, took the short opportunity of my master's absence, which being so short and uncertain, love, that had before determin'd this shou'd be done, added force and vigour to the lover, not to leave any thing to time and chance, which might, by Anselmo's return, cut off all opportunities of accomplishing so agreeable a work. The best and most officious servant of love's retinue, is occasion or opportunity : this it is that love improves in all its progress, but most in the beginning and first rise of an amour. I trust not in what I have said to the uncertainty of report, but to experience, which affords the most certain and most valuable knowledge, as I will inform you, madam, some day or other ; for I am like you, made of frail flesh and  
blood,

blood, fir'd by youth and youthful desires. But, madam, you did not surrender to Lothario till you had sufficient proof of his love, from his eyes, his vows, his promises, and gifts; till you had seen the merit of his person, and the beauty of his mind; all which convinc'd you how much he deserv'd to be lov'd. Then trouble yourself no more, madam, with these fears and jealousies; but thank your stars, that, since you were doom'd a victim to love, you fell by the force of such valour and merit that cannot be doubted. You yielded to one who has not only the four S's \*, which are requir'd in every good lover, but even the whole alphabet; as for example, he is, in my opinion, agreeable, bountiful, constant, dutiful, easy, faithful, gallant, honourable, ingenious, kind, loyal, mild, noble, officious, prudent, quiet, rich, secret, true, valiant, wise; the X indeed, is too harsh a letter to agree with him, but he is young and zealous for your honour and service. Camilla laugh'd at her woman's alphabet, and thought her (as indeed she was) more learn'd in the practical part of love, than she had yet confess'd. She then inform'd her mistress of an affair that had been betwixt her and a young man of the town. Camilla was not a little concern'd at what she said, being apprehensive that her honour might suffer by her woman's indiscretion; and therefore ask'd her if the amour had pass'd any farther than words? Leonela, without any fear or shame, own'd her guilty correspondence with all the freedom in the world; for the mistress's guilt gives the servant impudence; and generally they imitate their ladies frailties, without any fear of the publick censure.

Camilla, finding her error past remedy, could only beg Leonela to disclose nothing of her affair to her lover, and manage her amour with secrecy and discretion, for fear Lothario or Anselmo should hear of it. Leonela promis'd to obey her; but she did it in such a manner,

---

\* *As if we shou'd say, slightly, sprightly, sincere, and secret.*

that Camilla was perpetually in fear of the loss of her reputation by her folly ; for she grew so confident on her knowledge of her lady's transgression, that she admitted the gallant into the house, not caring if her lady knew it, being certain that she durst not make any discovery to her master : for when once a mistress has suffer'd her virtue to be vanquish'd, and admits of any criminal correspondence, it subjects her to her own servants, and makes her subservient to their leud practices, which she is slavishly bound to conceal. Thus it was with Camilla, who was forc'd to wink at the visible rendezvous, which Leonela had with her lover, in a certain chamber of the house which she thought proper for the occasion ; nor was that all, she was constrain'd to give her the opportunity of hiding him, that he might not be seen by her husband.

But all this caution did not secure him from being seen by Lothario one morning, as he was getting out of the house by break of day. His surprize had made him think it a spirit, had not his haste away, and his musing himself up as he did, that he might not be known, convinc'd him of his error, and thrown him into a fit of jealousy, that had certainly undone them all, had not Camilla's wit and address prevented it. For Lothario concluded that Camilla, that had made no very obstinate resistance to him, had as easily surrender'd to some other ; and he fancy'd that the person he saw come from her house was the new-favour'd lover ; never remembering there was such a person as Leonela in the house, and that he might be a lover of hers. For when once a woman parts with her virtue, she loses the esteem even of the man whose vows and tears won her to abandon it ; and he believes she will with as little, if not less difficulty, yield to another ; he perverts the least suspicions into reality, and takes the slightest appearance for the most evident matter of fact.

Thus Lothario, distracted by the most violent jealousy in the world, without allowing himself time to consider, gave way to the transports of his rage and desire of revenge on Camilla, who had not injur'd him ;

he goes immediately to Anselmo, and having found him abed : I have, my friend, said he to him, these several days undergone a most severe conflict within my mind, and us'd all the force and violence I was capable of to conceal an affair from you, which I can no longer forbear discovering, without an apparent wrong to justice, and my friendship. Know then that Camilla is now ready to do whatsoever I shall desire of her ; and the reason that most prevail'd with me to delay this discovery, was, that I would be satisfy'd whether she were in earnest, or only pretended this compliance to try me ; but had she been so virtuous as you and I believ'd her, she would, by this time, have inform'd you of that opportunity which, by your desire, I us'd ; but finding that she is silent, and takes no notice of that to you, I have reason to believe that she is but too sincere in those guilty promises she has made me, of meeting me to my satisfaction in the wardrobe, the next time your absence from the town should furnish her with an opportunity. (This was true indeed, for that was the place of their common rendezvous) Yet I would not have you, continu'd he, take a rash and inconsiderate revenge, since 'tis possible, before the time of assignation, her virtue may rally, and she repent her folly. Therefore, as you have hitherto taken my advice, be rul'd by me now, that you may not be impos'd on, but have a sufficient conviction before you put your resolves into execution. Pretend two or three days absence, and then privately convey yourself behind the hangings in the wardrobe, as you easily may, whence you may, without difficulty, be an eye-witness with me of Camilla's conduct ; and if it be as criminal as we may justly fear, then you may with secrecy and speed punish her, as the injury deserves.

Anselmo was extremely surpriz'd at so unexpected a misfortune, to find himself deceiv'd in those imaginary triumphs he pleas'd himself with, in Camilla's suppos'd victory over all Lothario's assaults. A great while he was in a silent suspence, with his eyes dejected, without force, and without spirit ; but turning at last to his friend, you have done all, said he, Lothario, that I  
could



could expect from so perfect a friendship, I will therefore be entirely guided by your advice; do therefore what you please, but use all the secrecy a thing of this nature requires. Lothario, assuring him of that, left him; but full of repentance for the rashness he had been guilty of in telling him so much as he had, since he might have taken a sufficient revenge, by a less cruel and dishonourable way. He curs'd his want of sense, and the weakness of his resolution, but could not find out any way to produce a less fatal event of his treachery, than he could justly expect from the experiment. But at last he concluded to inform Camilla of all he had done; which his freedom of access gave him opportunity to do that very day, when he found her alone; and she began thus to him. I am so oppress'd, my Lothario, with a misfortune which I lie under, that it will certainly for ever destroy my quiet and happiness, if there be not some speedy remedy found for it: Leonela is grown so presumptuous, on her knowledge of my affairs, that she admits her lover all night to her chamber, and so exposes my reputation to the censure of any that shall see him go out at unseasonable hours from my house; and the greatest, and most remediless part of my grief is, that I dare not correct or chide her for her imprudence and impudence; for being conscious of our correspondence, she obliges me to conceal her failings, which I am extremely apprehensive will in the end be very fatal to my happiness. Lothario was at first jealous that Camilla design'd cunningly thus to impose her own privado on him for Leonela's; but being convinc'd by her tears, and the apparent concern in her face, he began to believe her, and at the same time to be infinitely confounded and griev'd for what he had done. Yet he comforted Camilla, assuring her he would take effectual care for the future, that Leonela's impudence should do her no prejudice, and therefore begg'd her not to torment herself any more about it. Then he told all the unhappy effects of his jealous rage, and that her husband had agreed behind the arras to be witness of her weakness. He ask'd her pardon for the folly, and her compa-

fel how to redress and prevent the ill effect of it, and bring them out of those difficulties into which his madness had plung'd them.

Camilla express'd her resentment and her fears; and accus'd his treachery, baseness, and want of consideration; yet her anger and fears being appeas'd, and a woman's wit being always more pregnant in difficulties than a man's, she immediately thought of a way to deliver them from dangers that bore so dismal and helpless a face. She therefore bid him engage Anselmo to be there the next day, assuring him she did not question but by that means to get a more frequent, and secure opportunity of enjoying one another than they hitherto had had. She would not make him privy to her whole design, but bid him be sure to come after her husband was hid, as soon as Leonela shou'd call him, and that he shou'd answer as directly to whatsoever she shou'd ask him, as if Anselmo were not within hearing. Lothario spar'd no opportunity to get from her her whole design, that he might act his part with the greater assurance, and the better to contribute to the imposing on her husband. All you have to do, reply'd Camilla, is to answer me directly what I shall demand; nor would she discover any more, for fear he should not acquiesce in her opinion (which she was so well satisfy'd in) but raise difficulties, and by consequence, obstacles, that might hinder her design from having the desir'd event, or run her upon some less successful project. Lothario comply'd, and Anselmo in appearance left the town to retire to his friend in the country, but secretly return'd to hide himself in the wardrobe, which he did with the greater ease, because Camilla and Leonela wilfully gave him opportunity. We may easily imagine the grief with which Anselmo hid himself, since it was to be a spectator of his own dishonour, and the loss of all that happiness he possess'd in the embraces of his beautiful and belov'd Camilla. On the other hand, she being now certain that Anselmo was hid, enter'd the wardrobe with Leonela, and fetching a deep and piteous sigh, thus address'd herself to her: ah! my Leonela! would it not be much better that thou pierce  
this

this infamous bosom with Anselmo's dagger, before I execute what I design, which I have kept from thee that thou might'st not endeavour to disappoint me? Yet not so; for, where is the justice that I should suffer for another's offence? No, I will first know of Lothario what action of mine has given him assurance to make me a discovery of a passion so injurious to his friend, and my honour. Go to the window, Leonela, and call the wicked man to me, who doubtless is waiting in the street the signal for his admission to accomplish his villainous design; yet first my resolution shall be perform'd, which tho' it be cruel, is what my honour strictly demands of me. Alas! my dear lady, cry'd the cunning Leonela, alas! what do you intend to do with that dagger? Is your fatal design against yourself or Lothario? Alas! you can attack neither without the ruin of your fame and reputation. You had better give no opportunity to that bad man by admitting him while we are thus alone in the house: consider, madam, we are but two weak and helpless women, he a strong and resolute man, whose force is redoubled by the passion and desire that possess him; so that before you may be able to accomplish what you design, he may commit a crime that will be more injurious to you than the loss of your life. We have reason to curse my master Anselmo, who gives such frequent opportunities to impudence and dishonesty to pollute our house. But, madam, suppose you should kill him, as I believe you design, what shall we do with his dead body? What! said Camilla, why we would leave him in this place to be buried by Anselmo; for it must be a grateful trouble to him to bury with his own hand his own infamy and dishonour. Call him therefore quickly, for methinks every moment my revenge is deferr'd, I injure that loyalty I owe to my husband.

Anselmo gave great attention to all that was said, and every word of Camilla's made a strange alteration in his sentiments, so that he could scarce forbear coming out to prevent his friend's death, when he heard her desperate resolution against his life; but his desire of seeing the end of so brave a resolve withheld him, till he saw an

absolute necessity of discovering himself to hinder the mischief. Now Camilla put on a fear and weakness which resembled a swoon; and having thrown herself on a bed in the room, Leonela began a most doleful lamentation over her: alas! said she, how unfortunate should I be, if my lady, so eminent for virtue and chastity as well as beauty, should thus perish in my arms? This, and much more she utter'd with that force of perfect dissimulation, that whoever had seen her would have concluded her one of the most innocent virgins in the world, and her lady a meer persecuted Penelope. Camilla soon came to herself, and cry'd to Leonela, why don't you call the most treacherous and unfaithful of friends? Go, fly, and let not thy delays waste my revenge and anger in meer words and idle threats and curses. Madam, reply'd Leonela, I will go, but you must first give me that dagger, lest you commit some outrage upon your self in my absence, which may give an eternal cause of sorrow to all your friends that love and value you. Let not those fears detain you, said Camilla, but assure yourself I will not do any thing till you return; for tho' I shall not fear to punish myself in the highest degree, yet I shall not, like Lucretia, punish myself without killing him that was the principal cause of my dishonour. If I must die, I shall not refuse it; but I will first satisfy my revenge on him that has tempted me to come to this guilty assignation, to make him lament his crime without being guilty of any myself.

Camilla could scarce prevail with Leonela to leave her alone, but at last she obey'd her and withdrew, when Camilla entertain'd herself and her husband with this following soliloquy: good heav'n, said she, had I not better have continu'd my repulses, than by this seeming consent suffer Lothario to think scandalously of me, till my actions shall convince him of his error? That indeed might have been better in some respects, but then I should have wanted this opportunity of revenge, and the satisfaction of my husband's injur'd honour, if he were permitted without any correction to go off with the

insolence

insolence of offering such criminal assaults to my virtue. No, no, let the traitor's life atone for the guilt of his false and unfaithful attempts, and his blood quench that leud fire he was not content should burn in his own breast. Let the world be witness if it ever comes to know my story, that Camilla thought it not enough to preserve her virtue and loyalty to her husband entire, but also revenged the hateful affront, and the intended destruction of it. But it might be most convenient perhaps to let Anselmo know of this before I put my revenge in execution; yet on the first attempt I sent him word of it to the village, and I can attribute his not resenting so notorious an abuse to nothing but his generous temper, and confidence in his friend, incapable of believing so try'd a friend could be guilty of so much as a thought against his honour and reputation; nor is this incredulity so strange, since I for so long together could not perswade myself of the truth of what my eyes and ears convey'd to me; and nothing could have convinc'd me of my generous error, had his insolence kept within any bounds, and not dared to proceed to large gifts, large promises, and a flood of tears which he shed as the undissembled testimony of his passion. But to what purpose are these considerations? Or is there indeed any need of considering to perswade me to a brave resolve? Avaunt false thoughts. Revenge is now my task, let the treacherous man approach, let him come, let him die, let him perish; let him but perish, no matter what's the fatal consequence. My dear Anselmo receiv'd me to his bosom spotless and chaste, and so shall the grave receive me from his arms. Let the event be as fatal as it will, the worst pollution I can this way suffer is of mingling my own chaste blood with the impure and corrupted blood of the most false and treacherous of friends. Having said this, she travers'd the room in so passionate a manner, with the drawn dagger in her hand, and shew'd such an agitation of spirit in her looks and motion, that she appear'd like one distracted, or more like a murderer, than a tender and delicate lady.

Anselmo,



Anselmo, not a little to his satisfaction, very plainly saw and heard all this from behind the arras, which with the greatest reason and evidence in the world remov'd all his past doubts and jealousies, and he with abundance of concern wished that Lothario would not come, that he might by that means escape the danger that so apparently threatned him; to prevent which he had discover'd himself, had he not seen Leonela at that instant bring Lothario into the room. As soon as Camilla saw him enter, she describ'd a line with the poniard on the ground, and told him the minute he presum'd to pass that, she would strike the dagger to his heart: hear me, said she, and observe what I say without interruption; when I have done, you shall have liberty to make what reply you please. Tell me first, Lothario, do you know my husband, and do you know me? The question is not so difficult but you may give me immediate answer; there is no need of considering, speak therefore without delay. Lothario was not so dull as not to guess at her design in having her husband hid behind the hangings, and therefore adapted his answers so well to her questions, that the fiction was lost in the appearance of reality. I did never imagine, fair Camilla, said Lothario, that you would make this assignation to ask questions so distant from the dear end of my coming. If you had a mind still to delay my promis'd happiness, you should have prepar'd me for the disappointment; for, the nearer the hope of possession brings us to the good we desire, the greater is the pain to have those hopes destroy'd. But to answer your demands, I must own, madam, that I do know your husband, and he me; that this knowledge has grown up with us from our childhood; and, that I may be a witness against myself of the injury I am compell'd by love to do him, I do also own, divine Camilla, that you too well know the tenderness of our mutual friendship: yet love is a sufficient excuse for all my errors, if they were much more criminal than they are. And, madam, that I know you is evident, and love you equal to him, for nothing but your charms could have power enough to make me forget

get w  
holy  
break  
know  
fefs  
dare  
friend  
you k  
in wh  
satisf  
your  
tion  
alas!  
some  
on m  
self  
levity  
the f  
them  
traits  
regar  
from  
fame  
and  
tray  
prod  
long  
happ  
the  
serv  
you  
with  
husb  
blac  
and  
neg  
gave  
mor  
cau  
oug

get what I owe to my own honour, and what to the holy laws of friendship, all which I have been forc'd to break by the resistless tyranny of love. Ah! had I known you less, I had been more innocent. If you confess all this, said Camilla, if you know us both, how dare you violate so sacred a friendship, injure so true a friend, and appear thus confidently before me, whom you know to be esteem'd by him the mirror of his love, in which that love so often views itself with pleasure and satisfaction; and in which you ought to have survey'd yourself so far, as to have seen how small the temptation is, that has prevail'd on you to wrong him. But alas! this points me to the cause of your transgression, some suspicious action of mine when I have been least on my guard, as thinking myself alone; but assure yourself whatever it was, it proceeds not from looseness or levity of principle, but a negligence and liberty which the sex sometimes innocently fall into when they think themselves unobserv'd. If this were not the cause, say, traitor, when did I listen to your prayers, or in the least regard your tears and vows, so that you might derive from thence the smallest hope of accomplishing your infamous desires? Did I not always with the last aversion and disdain reject your criminal passion? Did I ever betray a belief in your lavish promises? Or admit of your prodigal gifts? But since without some hope no love can long subsist, I will lay that hateful guilt on some unhappy inadvertency of mine; and therefore will inflict the same punishment on myself, that your crime deserves. And to shew you that I cannot but be cruel to you, who will not spare myself, I sent for you to be a witness of that just sacrifice I shall make to my dear husband's injur'd honour, on which you have fix'd the blackest mark of infamy that your malice could suggest, and which I alas! have sullied too by my thoughtless neglect of depriving you of the occasion, if indeed I gave any, of nourishing your wicked intentions. Once more I tell you, that the bare suspicion that my want of caution, and setting so severe a guard on my actions as I ought, has made you harbour such wild and infamous  
inten-

intentions, is the sharpest of my afflictions, and what with my own hands I resolve to punish with the utmost severity. For, should I leave that punishment to another, it would but increase my guilt. Yes, I will die; but first to satisfy my revenge, and impartial justice, I will unmov'd, and unrelenting, destroy the fatal cause that has reduc'd me to this desperate condition.

At these words she flew with so much violence, and so well-acted a fury on Lothario with her naked dagger, that he could scarce think it feigned, and therefore secured himself from her blow by avoiding it, and holding her hand. Thereupon, to give more life to the fiction, as in a rage at her disappointed revenge on Lothario, she cried out: since my malicious fortune denies a compleat satisfaction to my just desires, at least it shall not be in its power intirely to defeat my resolution. With that, drawing back her dagger-hand from Lothario who held it, she struck it into that part of her body where it might do her the least damage, and then fell down, as fainting away with the wound. Lothario and Leonela surpriz'd at the unexpected event, knew not yet what to think, seeing her still lie all bloody on the ground; Lothario pale and trembling ran to her to take out the dagger, but was deliver'd of his fears when he saw so little blood follow it, and more than ever admir'd the cunning and wit of the beautiful Camilla. Yet to play his part as well, and shew himself a friend, he lamented over Camilla's body in the most pathetick manner in the world, as if she had been really dead; he curs'd himself, and curs'd his friend that had put him on that fatal experiment; and knowing that Anselmo heard him, he said such things that were able to draw a greater pity for him than even for Camilla, though she seem'd to have lost her life in the unfortunnte adventure. Leonela remov'd her body to the bed, and begg'd Lothario to seek some surgeon, that might with all the secrecy in the world cure her lady's wound. She also ask'd his advice, how to excuse it to her master, if he should return before it was perfectly cur'd. He reply'd, they might say what they pleas'd, that he was not in a humour of advising,  
but

but bid her endeavour to stanch her mistress's blood, for he would go where they should never hear more of him ; and so he left them, with all the appearance of grief and concern that the occasion required. He was no sooner gone, but he had leisure to reflect, with the greatest wonder imaginable, on Camilla's and her woman's conduct in this affair, and on the assurance which this scene had given Anselmo of his wife's virtue ; since now he could not but believe he had a second Portia, and he long'd to meet him, to rejoice over the best dissembled imposture that ever bore away the opinion of truth. Leonela stanch'd the blood, which was no more than necessary for covering the cheat, and washing the wound with wine only as she bound it up, her discourse was so moving, and so well acted, that it had been alone sufficient to have convinc'd Anselmo that he had the most virtuous wife in the world. Camilla was not silent, but added fresh confirmations ; in every word she spoke, she complain'd of her cowardice and baseness of spirit, that deny'd her time and force to dispatch that life, which was now so hateful to her. She ask'd her too, whether she shou'd inform her husband of what had pass'd, or not ? Leonela was for her concealing it, since the discovery must infallibly engage her husband in a revenge on Lothario, which must as certainly expose him too ; for those things were never accomplish'd without the greatest danger ; and that a good wife ought to the best of her power prevent involving her husband in quarrels. Camilla yielded to her reasons ; but added, that they must find out some pretended cause of her wound, which he would certainly see at his return. Leonela reply'd, that it was a difficult task, since she was incapable even in jest to dissemble the truth. Am I not, answer'd Camilla, under the same difficulty, who cannot save my life by the odious refuge of a falsehood ? had we not better then confess the real truth, than be caught in a lie ? well, madam, return'd Leonela, let this give you no farther trouble, by-to-morrow morning I shall find out some expedient or other ; though I hope the place where the wound is, may conceal it enough from his observation to  
secure

secure us from all apprehension ; leave therefore the whole event to heaven, which always favours and assists the innocent.

Anselmo saw and heard this formal tragedy of his ruin'd honour, with all the attention imaginable, in which all the actors perform'd their parts so to the life, that they seem'd the truth they represented ; he wish'd with the last impatience for the night, that he might convey himself from his hiding place to his friend's house, and there rejoice for this happy discovery of his wife's experienc'd virtue. Camilla and her maid took care to furnish him with an opportunity of departing, of which he soon took hold, for fear of losing it. 'Tis impossible to tell you all the embraces he gave Lothario, and the joy and extreme satisfaction he express'd at his good fortune, or the extravagant praises he gave Camilla. Lothario heard all this without taking a friend's share in the pleasure, for he was shock'd with the concern he had to see his friend so grossly impos'd on, and the guilt of his own treachery in injuring his honour. Though Anselmo easily perceiv'd that Lothario was not touch'd with any pleasure at his relation, yet he believ'd Camilla's wound, caus'd by him, was the true motive of his not sharing his joy ; and therefore assur'd him, he need not too much trouble himself for it, since it could not be dangerous, she and her woman having agreed to conceal it from him. This cause of his fear being remov'd, he desired him to put on a face of joy, since by his means he shou'd now possess a perfect happiness and content ; and therefore he would spend the rest of his life in conveying Camilla's virtue to posterity, by writing her praise in verse. Lothario approv'd his resolution, and promis'd to do the same. Thus Anselmo remain'd the most delightfully deceiv'd of any man alive. He therefore carried Lothario immediately to his house, as the instrument of his glory, though he was indeed the only cause of his infamy and dishonour. Camilla receiv'd him with a face, that ill express'd the satisfaction of her mind, being forc'd to put on frowns in her looks, while  
her

her he  
presenc

For  
fortun  
wicked  
and A



The  
wi  
cen

T  
chan  
good  
and  
na's  
days  
wer  
San  
thy  
two  
ly  
Qu  
ha  
an  
wi  
Sa  
do  
te  
to  
hi



her heart prompted nothing but smiles of joy for his presence.

For some months the fraud was conceal'd; but then fortune turning her wheel, discover'd to the world the wickedness they had so long and artificially disguis'd; and Anselmo's impertinent curiosity cost him his life.



C H A P. VIII.

*The conclusion of the novel of the Curious Impertinent; with the dreadful battle betwixt Don Quixote, and certain wine-skins.*

THE novel was come near a conclusion, when Sancho Panza came running out of Don Quixote's chamber in a terrible fright, and crying out, help, help, good people, help my master, he's just now at it, tooth and nail, with that same giant, the princess Micomicona's foe: I ne'er saw a more dreadful battle in my born-days. He has lent him such a siver, that whip, off went the giant's head, as round as a turnip. You're mad, Sancho, said the curate, interrupted in his reading; is thy master such a devil of a heroe, as to fight a giant at two thousand leagues distance? upon this, they presently heard a noise and bustle in the chamber, and Don Quixote bawling out, stay villain, robber, stay; since I have thee here, thy scimitar shall but little avail thee; and with this, they heard him strike with his sword, with all his force, against the walls. Good folks, said Sancho, my master does nor want your hearkning; why don't you run in and help him? though I believe 'tis after meat mustard, for sure the giant is by this time gone to pot, and giving an account of his ill life: for I saw his blood run all about the house, and his head sailing in

the middle on't: but such a head! 'tis bigger than any † wine-skin in Spain. Death and hell (cries the inn-keeper) I'll be cut like a cucumber, if this Don Quixote, or Don Devil, has not been hacking my wine-skins that stood fill'd at his bed's-head, and this coxcomb has taken the spilt Liquor for blood. Then running with the whole company into the room, they found the poor knight in the most comical posture imaginable.

He was standing in his shirt, the fore-part of it scarcely reaching to the bottom of his belly, and about a span shorter behind; this added a very peculiar air to his long lean legs, as dirty and hairy as a beast's. To make him all of a piece, he wore on his head a little red greasy cast nightcap of the inn-keeper's; he had wrapp'd one of the best blankets about his left arm for a shield; and wielded his drawn sword in the right, laying about him pell-mell; with now and then a start of some military expression, as if he had been really engag'd with some giant. But the best jest of all, he was all this time fast asleep; for the thoughts of the adventure he had undertaken, had so wrought on his imagination, that his depraved fancy had in his sleep represented to him the kingdom of Micomicon, and the giant; and dreaming that he was then fighting him, he assaulted the wine-skins so desperately, that he set the whole chamber a-float with good wine. The inn-keeper, enrag'd to see the havoc, flew at Don Quixote with his fists; and had not Cardenio and the curate taken him off, he had prov'd a giant indeed against the knight. all this could not wake the poor Don, till the barber throwing a bucket of cold water on him, waken'd him from his sleep, tho' not from his dream.

---

† In Spain they keep their wines in the skin of a hog, goat, sheep, or other beast, pitch'd withm and sew'd close without.

The shortness of her champion's shirt gave Dorothea a surfeit of the battle. Sancho ran up and down the room searching for the giant's head, 'till finding his labour fruitless, well, well, said he, now I see plainly that this house is haunted, for when I was here before, in this very room was I beaten like any stock-fish, but knew no more than the man in the moon who struck me; and now the giant's head that I saw cut off with these eyes, is vanish'd; and I'm sure I saw the body spout blood like a pump. What a prating and a nonsense does this damn'd son of a whore keep about blood and a pump, and I know not what, said the inn-keeper; I tell you, rascal, 'tis my wine-skins that are slash'd, and my wine that runs about the floor here, and I hope to see the soul of him that spilt it swimming in hell for his pains. Well, well, said Sancho, don't trouble me; I only tell you, that I can't find the giant's head, and my earldom is gone after it, and so I'm undone, like salt in water. And truly Sancho's waking dream was as pleasant as his master's when asleep; the inn-keeper was almost mad to see the foolish squire harp so on the same string with his frantick master, and swore they should not come off now as before; that their chivalry should be no satisfaction for his wine, but that they should pay him sauce for the damage, and for the very leathern patches which the wounded wine-skins would want.

Don Quixote, in the mean while, believing he had finish'd his adventure, and mistaking the curate, that held him by the arms, for the princess Micomicona, fell on his knees before him, and with a respect due to a royal presence; now may your highness, said he, great and illustrious princess, live secure, free from any further apprehensions from your conquer'd enemy; and now am I acquitted of my engagement, since, by the assistance of heaven, and the influence of her favour, by whom I live and conquer, your adventure is so happily atchieved. Did not I tell you so gentlefolks (said Sancho) who is drunk or mad now? see if my master has not already

put the giant in pickle? Here are the bulls \*, and I am an earl. The whole company (except the inn-keeper, who gave himself to the devil) were like to split at the extravagancies of master and man. At last, the barber, Cardenio, and the curate, baving, with much ado, got Don Quixote to bed, he presently fell asleep, being heartily tir'd; and then they left him, to comfort Sancho Panza for the loss of the giant's head; but it was no easy matter to appease the inn-keeper, who was at his wit's end for the unexpected and sudden fate of his wine-skins

The hostess, in the mean time, ran up and down the house crying and roaring: in an ill hour, said she, did this unlucky knight-errant come into my house; I wish, for my part, I had never seen him, for he has been a dear guest to me. He and his man, his horse and his ass, went away last time without paying me a cross for their supper, their bed, their litter and provender; and all, forsooth, because he was seeking adventures. What in the devil's name have I to do with his statutes of chivalry? if they oblige him not to pay, they shou'd oblige him not to eat neither. 'Twas upon this score that the t'other fellow took away my good tail; 'tis clear spoil'd, the hair is all torn off, and my husband can never use it again. And now to come upon me again, with destroying my wine-skins, and spilling my liquor; may some body spill his heart's blood for't for me: but I will be paid, so I will, to the last maravedis, or I'll disown my name, and forswear the mother that bore me. Her honest maid Maritornes seconded her fury; but Mr. Curate stopp'd their mouths by promising that he would see them satisfy'd for their wine and their skins, but especially for the tail which they kept such a clutter about. Dorothea comforted Sancho, assuring him, that whenever it appear'd that his master had kill'd the giant, and restor'd her to her dominions, he should be

---

\* *In allusion to the joy of the mob in Spain, when they see the bulls coming.*

sure of the best earldom in her disposal. With this he huckl'd up again, and swore that he himself had seen the giant's head, by the same token that it had a beard that reach'd down to his middle; and if it could not be found it must be hid by witchcraft, for every thing went by enchantment in that house, as he had found to his cost when he was there before. Dorothea answer'd, that she believ'd him; and desir'd him to pluck up his spirits, for all things would be well. All parties being quieted, Cardenio, Dorothea, and the rest, intreated the curate to finish the novel, which was so near a conclusion; and he, in obedience to their commands, took up the book and read on.

Anselmo grew so satisfy'd in Camilla's virtue, that he liv'd with all the content and security in the world; to confirm which, Camilla ever in her looks seem'd to discover her aversion to Lothario, which made him desire Anselmo to dispense with his coming to his house, since he found how averse his wife was to him, and how great a disgust she had to his company; but Anselmo would not be perswaded to yield to his request; and was so blind, that, seeking his content, he perpetually promoted his dishonour. He was not the only person pleas'd with the condition he liv'd in; Leonela was so transported with her ampur, that, secur'd by her lady's connivance, she perfectly abandon'd herself to the indiscreet enjoyment of her gallant: so that one night her master heard some body in her chamber, and coming to the door to discover who it was, he found it held fast against him; but at last forcing it open, he saw one leap out of the window the instant he enter'd the room: he would have pursu'd him, but Leonela clinging about him, begg'd him to appease his anger and concern, since the person that made his escape was her husband. Anselmo would not believe her, but drawing his dagger, threatned to kill her if she did not immediately make full discovery of the matter. Distracted with fear, she begg'd him to spare her life, and she would discover things that more nearly related to him than he imagin'd. Speak quickly then, reply'd Anselmo, or you die. 'Tis impos-



sible, return'd she, that in this confusion and fright I should say any thing that can be understood ; but give me but till to morrow morning, and I will lay such things before you, as will surprize and amaze you : but believe me, sir, the person that leap'd out of the window, is a young man of this city, who is contracted to me. This something appeas'd Anselmo, and prevail'd with him to allow her till the next morning to make her confession ; for he was too well assur'd of Camilla's virtue, by the past trial, to suspect that there could be any thing relating to her in what Leonela had to tell him : wherefore fastening her in her room, and threatening that she should never come out till she had done what she had promis'd, he return'd to his chamber to Camilla, and told her all that had pass'd, without omitting the promise she had given him to make some strange discovery the next morning. You may easily imagine the concern this gave Camilla ; she made no doubt but that the discovery Leonela had promis'd, was of her disloyalty ; and without waiting to know whether it were so or not, that very night, as soon as Anselmo was asleep, taking with her all her jewels, and some money, she got undiscovered out of the house, and went to Lothario, inform'd him of all that had pass'd, and desir'd him either to put her in some place of safety, or to go with her where they might enjoy each other secure from the fears of Anselmo. This surprizing relation so confounded Lothario, that for some time he knew not what he did, or what resolution to take ; but at last, with Camilla's consent, he put her into a nunnery where a sister of his was abbess, and immediately, without acquainting any body with his departure, left the city.

Anselmo, as soon as it was day, got up, without missing his wife, and hurry'd away to Leonela's chamber, to hear what she had to say to him ; but he found no body there, only the sheets ty'd together, and fasten'd to the window, shew'd which way she had made her escape ; on which he return'd very sad to tell Camilla the adventure, but was extremely surpriz'd when he found her not in the whole house, nor could hear any news of her from  
his

his servants : but finding in his search her trunks open, and most of her jewels gone, he no longer doubted of his dishonour : so, pensive and half dress'd as he was, he went to Lothario's lodging, to tell him his misfortune ; but when his servants inform'd him that he was gone that very night, with all his money and jewels, his pangs were redoubl'd, and his grief increas'd almost to madness. To conclude, he return'd home, found his house empty, for fear had driven away all his servants. He knew not what to think, say, or do : he saw himself forsaken by his friend, his wife, and his very servants, with whom he imagin'd that heaven himself had abandon'd him ; but his greatest trouble was to find himself robb'd of his honour and reputation, for Camilla's crime was but too evident from all these concurring circumstances. After a thousand distracting thoughts, he resolv'd to retreat to that village whither he formerly retir'd to give Lothario an opportunity to ruin him ; wherefore fastning up his doors, he took horse, full of despair and languishing sorrow, the violence of which was so great, that he had scarce rid half way, when he was forced to alight, and tying his horse to a tree, he threw himself beneath it ; and spent, in that melancholy posture, a thousand rack-ing reflections, most part of the day, till a little before night he discover'd a passenger coming the same road, of whom he enquir'd what news at Florence ? the traveller reply'd, that the most surprizing news that had been heard of late, was now all the talk of the city, which was, that Lothario had that very night carry'd away the wealthy Anselmo's wife Camilla, which was all confess'd by Camilla's woman, who was apprehended that night as she slipp'd from the window of Anselmo's house, by a pair of sheets. The truth of this story I cannot affirm, continu'd the traveller ; but every body is astonish'd at the accident ; for no man could ever suspect such a crime from a person engag'd in so strict a friendship with Anselmo, as Lothario was ; for they were call'd the two friends. Is it yet known, reply'd Anselmo, which way Lothario and Camilla are gone ? No, sir, return'd the traveller, tho' the governor has made as strict

strict a search after them as is possible. Anselmo ask'd no more questions, but after they had taken their leaves of each other, the traveller left him and pursued his journey.

This mournful news so affected the unfortunate Anselmo, that he was struck with death almost that very moment ; getting therefore on his horse, as well as he could, he arriv'd at his friend's house. He knew nothing yet of his disgrace ; but seeing him so pale and melancholy, concluded that some great misfortune had befallen him. Anselmo desir'd to be immediately led to his chamber, and furnish'd with pen, ink and paper, and to be left alone with his door locked : when finding that his end approach'd, he resolv'd to leave in writing the cause of his sudden and unexpected death. Taking therefore the pen, he began to write ; but unable to finish what he design'd, he dy'd a martyr to his impertinent curiosity. The gentleman finding he did not call, and that it grew late, resolv'd to enter his chamber, and see whether his friend was better or worse ; he found him half out of bed, lying on his face, with the pen in his hand, and a paper open before him. Seeing him in this posture he drew near him, call'd and mov'd him, but soon found he was dead ; which made him call his servants to behold the unhappy event, and then took up the paper, which he saw was written in Anselmo's own hand, and was to this effect.

“ **A** Foolish and impertinent desire has robb'd me of  
 “ life. If Camilla hear of my death let her  
 “ know that I forgive her ; for she was not oblig'd to  
 “ do miracles, nor was there any reason I should have  
 “ desir'd or expected it ; and since I contriv'd my own  
 “ dishonour, there is no cause —

Thus far Anselmo writ, but life wou'd not hold out till he could give the reasons he design'd. The next day the gentleman of the house sent word of Anselmo's death to his relations, who already knew his misfortunes, as well as the nunnery whither Camilla was retir'd.

She

She herself was indeed very near that death which her husband had pass'd, though not for the loss of him, but Lothario, of which she had lately heard a flying report. But though she was a widow now, she would neither take the veil, nor leave the nunnery, till in a few days the news was confirm'd of his being slain in a battle betwixt Monsieur de Lautrec, and that great General Gonzalo Fernandez de Cordona, in the kingdom of Naples. This was the end of the offending, and too late penitent friend; the news of which made Camilla immediately profess herself, and soon after, overwhelm'd with grief and melancholy, pay for her transgression with the loss of her life. This was the unhappy end of them all proceeding from so impertinent a beginning.

I like this novel well enough, said the curate; yet, after all, I cannot persuade myself, that there's any thing of truth in it; and if it be purely invention, the author was in the wrong; for 'tis not to be imagin'd there cou'd ever be a husband so foolish, as to venture on so dangerous an experiment. Had he made his husband and wife, a gallant and a mistress, the fable had appear'd more probable; but, as it is, 'tis next to impossible. However, I must confess, I have nothing to object against his manner of telling it.



## CHAP. IX.

*Containing an account of many surprizing accidents in the inn.*

AT the same time the inn-keeper, who stood at the door seeing company coming, more guests, cry'd he, a brave jolly troop, on my word. If they stop here, we may sing O be joyful. What are they, said Cardenio? Four men, said the host, on horseback, *à la Gineta,*

*Gineta* \*, with black masks † on their faces, and arm'd with lances and targets ; a lady too all in white, that rides single and mask'd ; and two running footmen. Are they near, said the curate ? Just at the door, reply'd the inn-keeper. Hearing this, Dorothea veil'd herself, and Cardenio had just time enough to step into the next room, where Don Quixote lay, when the strangers came into the yard. The four horse-men, who made a very genteel appearance, dismounted and went to help down the lady, whom one of them taking in his arms, carry'd into the house ; where he seated her in a chair by the chamber-door, into which Cardenio had withdrawn. All this was done without discovering their faces, or speaking a word ; only the lady, as she sat down in the chair, breath'd out a deep sigh, and let her arms sink down, in a weak and fainting posture. The curate, marking their odd behaviour, which rais'd in him a curiosity to know who they were, went to their servants in the stable, and ask'd what their masters were ? Indeed † Sir, said one of them,

---

\* *A kind of riding with short stirrups, which the Spaniards took from the Arabians, and is still used by all the African and Eastern nations, with part of the northern, such as the Hungarians, and is advantageous in fight ; for being ready to strike with their sabres, they rise on their stirrups, and, following as it were their blow, give more force to it.*

† Antifaz : *a piece of thin black silk, which the Spaniards wear before their faces in travelling, not for disguise, but to keep off the dust and sun.*

‡ It is the original *par diez* : (i. e. by ten) instead of *par diez* (i. e. by G-d) thinking to cheat the devil of an oath, as when we say y-cod for by G-d. Tho' a certain presbyter assur'd me, travelling together once upon the road, that y-cod was an oath. But when I catcht him saying odlooker's, he excus'd himself, and said it was only a contraction of God succour us. And consequently no oath.

that's



that's more than we can tell you ; they seem of no mean quality, especially that gentleman who carry'd the lady into the house, for the rest pay him great respect, and his word is a law to them. Who is the lady, said the curate ? We know no more of her than of the rest, answer'd the fellow, for we could never see her face all the time, and 'tis impossible we should know her or them any otherwise. They pick'd us up on the road, my comrade and myself, and prevail'd with us to wait on them to Andalusia, promising to pay us well for our trouble ; so that bating the two days travelling in their company, they are utter strangers to us. Could you not hear them name one another all this time, ask'd the curate ? No, truly, sir, answer'd the foot-man, for we heard them not speak a syllable all the way : the poor lady, indeed, us'd to sigh and grieve so piteously, that we are perswaded she has no stomach to this journey : whatever may be the cause we know not ; by her garb she seems to be a nun, but by her grief and melancholy, one might guess they are going to make her one, when perhaps the poor girl has not a bit of nuns flesh about her. Very likely, said the curate ; and with that leaving them, he return'd to the place where he left Dorothea, who, hearing the mask'd lady sigh so frequently, mov'd by the natural pity of the soft sex, could not forbear enquiring the cause of her sorrow. Pardon me, madam, said she, if I beg to know your grief ; and assure yourself, that my request does not proceed from meer curiosity, but an earnest inclination to serve and assist you, if your misfortune be any such as our sex is naturally subject to, and in the power of a woman to cure. The melancholy lady made no return to her compliment, and Dorothea press'd her in vain with new reasons, when the gentleman, whom the foot-boy signify'd to be the chief of the company, interpos'd : madam, said he, don't trouble yourself to throw away any generous offer on that ungrateful woman, whose nature cannot return an obligation ; neither expect any answer to your demands, for her tongue is a stranger to truth. Sir, said the disconsolate lady, my truth and honour

honour have made me thus miserable, and my sufferings are sufficient to prove you the falsest and most base of men. Cardenio being only parted from the company by Don Quixote's chamber-door, overheard these last words very distinctly; and immediately cry'd out, good heaven, what do I hear! what voice struck my ear just now? The lady startl'd at his exclamation, sprung from the chair, and would have bolted into the chamber whence the voice came; but the gentleman perceiving it, laid hold on her, to prevent her, which so disorder'd the lady that her mask fell off, and discover'd an incomparable face, beautiful as an angel's, tho' very pale, and strangely compos'd, her eyes eagerly rolling on every side, which made her appear distracted. Dorothea and the rest, not guessing what her eyes sought by their violent motion, beheld her with grief and wonder. She struggl'd so hard, and the gentleman was so disorder'd by beholding her, that his mask dropp'd off too, and discover'd to Dorothea, who was assisting to hold the lady, the face of her husband Don Ferdinand: scarce had she known him, when with a long and dismal oh! she fell in a swoon, and wou'd have reach'd the floor with all her weight, had not the barber, by good fortune, stood behind and supported her. The curate run presently to help her, and pulling off her veil to throw water in her face, Don Ferdinand presently knew her, and was struck almost as dead as she at the sight; nevertheless he did not quit Lucinda, who was the lady that struggl'd so hard to get out of his hands. Cardenio hearing Dorothea's exclamation, and imagining it to be Lucinda's voice, flew into the chamber in great disorder, and the first object he met was Don Ferdinand holding Lucinda, who presently knew him. They were all struck dumb with amazement: Dorothea gaz'd on Don Ferdinand; Don Ferdinand on Cardenio; and Cardenio and Lucinda on one another. At last Lucinda broke silence, and addressing Don Ferdinand, let me go, said she; unloose your hold, my lord: by the generosity you shou'd have, or by your inhumanity, since it must be so, I conjure you, leave me, that I may cling like ivy to my old support; and

of  
and fro  
gifts,  
tend m  
me to  
expect  
vince  
forget  
which  
here  
lose i  
shake  
Doro  
Lucin  
nand  
cessit  
bath  
arms  
beho  
Doro  
you  
con  
own  
cen  
she  
my  
Ho  
and  
wa  
by  
yo  
wi  
Co  
ba  
yo  
t  
a  
y  
y  
b  
e

and from whom, neither your threats, nor prayers, nor gifts, nor promises, could ever alienate my love. Contend not against heaven, whose power alone could bring me to my dear husband's sight, by such strange and unexpected means : you have a thousand instances to convince you, that nothing but death can make me ever forget him : let this, at least, turn your love into rage, which may prompt you to end my miseries with my life, here before my dear husband, where I shall be proud to lose it, since my death may convince him of my unshaken love and honour, till the last minute of my life. Dorothea, by this time had recover'd, and finding, by Lucinda's discourse who she was, and that Don Ferdinand would not unhand her, she made a virtue of necessity, and falling at his feet, my lord, cry'd she, all bath'd in tears, if that beauty which you hold in your arms, has not altogether dazzl'd your eyes, you may behold at your feet the once happy, but now miserable Dorothea. I am that poor and humble villager, whom your generous bounty, I dare not say your love, did condescend to raise to the honour of calling you her own : I am she, who, once confin'd to peaceful innocence, led a contented life, till your importunity, your shew of honour, and deluding words, charm'd me from my retreat, and made me resign my freedom to your power. How I am recompens'd, may be guess'd by my grief, and my being found here in this strange place, whither I was led, not through any dishonourable ends, but purely by despair and grief to be forsaken of you. 'Twas at your desire I was bound to you by the strictest tie, and whatever you do, you can never cease to be mine. Consider, my dear lord, that my matchless love may balance the beauty and nobility of the person for whom you would forsake me ; she cannot share your love, for 'tis only mine ; and Cardenio's interest in her will not admit a partner. 'Tis easier far, my lord, to recall your wandring desires, and fix them upon her that adores you, than to draw her to love who hates you. Remember how you did solicit my humble state, and conscious of my meanness, yet paid a veneration to my inno-

cence, which join'd with the honourable condition of my yielding to your desires, pronounce me free from ill design or dishonour. Consider these undeniable truths : have some regard to your honour ! remember you're a Christian ! why should you then make her life end so miserably, whose beginning your favour made so happy ? If I must not expect the usage and respect of a wife, let me but serve you as a slave ; so I belong to you, tho' in the meanest rank, I never shall complain : let me not be expos'd to the standing reflections of the censorious world by so cruel a separation from my lord : afflict not the declining years of my poor parents, whose faithful services to you and yours have merited a more suitable return. If you imagine the current of your noble blood should be defil'd by mixing with mine, consider how many noble houses have run in such a channel ; besides the woman's side is not essentially requisite to enoble descent : but chiefly think on this, that virtue is the truest nobility, which if you stain by basely wronging me, you bring a greater blot upon your family than marrying me could cause. In fine, my lord, you cannot, must not disown me for your wife : to attest which truth, I call your own words, which must be true, if you prize yourself for honour, and that nobility, whose want you so despise in me ; witness your oaths and vows, witness that Heaven which you so oft invoc'd to ratify your promises ; and if all these should fail, I make my last appeal to your own conscience, whose sting will always represent my wrongs fresh to your thoughts, and disturb your joys amidst your greatest pleasures.

These, with many such arguments, did the mournful Dorothea urge, appearing so lovely in her sorrow, that Don Ferdinand's friends, as well as all the rest sympathiz'd with her. Lucinda particularly, as much admiring her wit and beauty, as mov'd by the tears, the piercing sighs and moans that follow'd her intreaties ; and she wou'd have gone nearer to have comforted her, had not Ferdinand's arms, that still held her, prevented it. He stood full of confusion, with his eyes fix'd attentively on Dorothea a great while ; at last, opening his

arms,

arms,  
charm  
possib  
Lucin  
have  
denio  
caugh  
ness  
my d  
for v  
whic  
blefs  
open  
Card  
her  
yes,  
'tis  
rafs  
thre  
com  
Don  
ceiv  
and  
affa  
an  
tha  
tear  
and  
in  
hov  
He  
suc  
ger  
bel  
in  
yo  
an  
th  
th  
tru

arms, he quitted Lucinda, thou hast conquer'd, cry'd he, charming Dorothea, thou hast conquer'd me, 'tis impossible to resist so many united truths and charms. Lucinda was still so disorder'd and weak, that she would have fall'n when Ferdinand quitted her, had not Cardenio, without regard to his safety, leap'd forward and caught her in his arms, and embracing her with eagerness and joy; thanks, gracious Heaven, cry'd he aloud, my dear, my faithful wife, thy sorrows now are ended; for where can'st thou rest more safe than in my arms, which now support thee, as once they did when my blest'd fortune first made thee mine? Lucinda then opening her eyes, and finding herself in the arms of her Cardenio, without regard to ceremony or decency, threw her arms about his neck, and laying her face to his, yes, said she, thou art he, thou art my lord indeed! 'tis even you yourself the right owner of this poor, harra's'd captive. Now fortune act thy worst, nor fears nor threats shall ever part me from the sole support and comfort of my life. This sight was very surprizing to Don Ferdinand and the other spectators. Dorothea perceiving, by Don Ferdinand's change of countenance, and laying his hand to his sword, that he prepared to assault Cardenio, fell suddenly on her knees; and with an endearing embrace, held Don Ferdinand's legs so fast, that he could not stir. What means, cry'd she, all in tears, the only refuge of my hope? See here thy own and dearest wife at thy feet, and her you would enjoy in her true husband's arms. Think then, my lord, how unjust is your attempt, to dissolve that knot which Heaven has ty'd so fast. Can you e'er think or hope success in your design on her, who contemning all dangers, and confirm'd in strictest constancy and honour, before your face lies bath'd in tears of joy and passion in her true lover's bosom? For Heaven's sake I intreat you, by your own words I conjure you to mitigate your anger, and permit that faithful pair to consummate their joys, and spend their remaining days in peace: thus may you make it appear that you are generous and truly noble, giving the world so strong a proof that you



have your reason at command, and your passion in subjection. All this while, Cardenio, though he still held Lucinda in his arms, had a watchful eye on Don-Ferdinand; resolving, if he had made the least offer to his prejudice, to make him repent it and all his party, if possible, tho' at the expence of his life. But Don Ferdinand's friends, the curate, the barber, and all the company (not forgetting honest Sancho Panza) got together about Don Ferdinand, and intreated him to pity the beautiful Dorothea's tears; that, considering what she had said, the truth of which was apparent, it would be the highest injustice to frustrate her lawful hopes; that their strange and wonderful meeting could not be attributed to chance, but the peculiar and directing providence of Heaven; that nothing (as Mr. Curate very well urg'd) but death could part Cardenio from Lucinda; and that tho' the edge of his sword might separate them, he would make them happier by death, than he could hope to be by surviving; that in irrecoverable accidents, a submission to fate, and a resignation of our wills, shew'd not only the greatest prudence, but also the highest courage and generosity; that he should not envy those happy lovers what the bounty of Heaven had conferr'd on them, but that he shou'd turn his eyes on Dorothea's grief, view her incomparable beauty, which, with her true and unfeign'd love, made large amends for the meanness of her parentage; but principally it lay upon him, if he glory'd in the titles of Nobility and Christianity, to keep his promise unviolated; that the more reasonable part of mankind could not otherwise be satisfy'd, or have any esteem for him: also that it was the special prerogative of beauty, if heightned by virtue and adorned with modesty, to lay claim to any dignity, without disparagement or scandal to the person that raises it; and that the strong dictates of delight having been once indulged, we are not to be blamed for following them afterwards, provided they be not unlawful. In short, to these reasons they added so many enforcing arguments, that Don Ferdinand, who was truly a gentleman, could no longer resist reason, but

but stooped down, and embracing Dorothea, rise, madam, said he, it is not proper that she should lie prostrate at my feet, who triumphs over my soul: if I have not hitherto paid you all the respect I ought, 'twas perhaps so order'd by Heaven, that having by this a stronger conviction of your constancy and goodness, I may henceforth set the greater value on your merit: let the future respects and services I shall pay you, plead a pardon for my past transgressions; and let the violent passions of my love, that first made me yours, be an excuse for that which caus'd me to forsake you: view the now happy Lucinda's eyes, and there read a thousand farther excuses; but I promise henceforth never to disturb her quiet; and may she live long and contented with her dear Cardenio; as I hope to do with my dearest Dorothea. Thus concluding, he embrac'd her again so lovingly, that it was with no small difficulty that he kept in his tears, which he endeavour'd to conceal, being asham'd to discover so effeminate a proof of his remorse.

Cardenio, Lucinda, and the greatest part of the company could not so well command their passions, but all wept for joy; even Sancho Panza himself shed tears, though as he afterwards confess'd, it was not for downright grief, but because he found not Dorothea to be the queen of Micomicona, as he suppos'd, and of whom he expected so many favours and preferments. Cardenio and Lucinda fell at Don Ferdinand's feet, giving him thanks, with the strongest expressions which gratitude could suggest; he rais'd them up, and receiv'd their acknowledgments with much modesty; then begg'd to be inform'd by Dorothea, how she came to that place. She related to him all she had told Cardenio, but with such a grace, that what were misfortunes to her, prov'd an inexpressible pleasure to those that heard her relation. When she had done, Don Ferdinand told all that had befall'n him in the city, after he found the paper in Lucinda's bosom, which declared Cardenio to be her husband; how he would have kill'd her, had not her parents prevented him; how afterwards, mad with

shame and anger, he left the city, to wait a more commodious opportunity of revenge; how in a short time he learnt that Lucinda was fled to a nunnery, resolving to end her days there, if she could not spend them with Cardenio; that, having desir'd those three gentlemen to go with him, they went to the nunnery, and waiting till they found the gate open, he left two of the gentlemen to secure the door, while he with the other enter'd the house, where they found Lucinda talking with a nun in the cloister; they forcibly brought her thence to a village, where they disguis'd themselves for their more convenient flight, which they more easily brought about, the nunnery being situate in the fields, distant a good way from any town. He likewise added, how Lucinda finding herself in his power, fell into a swoon, and that after she came to herself, she continually wept and sigh'd, but would not speak a syllable; and that, accompanied with silence only and tears, they had travelled till they came to that inn, which proved to him as his arrival at Heaven, having put a happy conclusion to all his earthly misfortunes.



## C H A P. X.

*The History of the famous princess Micomicona continu'd,  
with other pleasant adventures.*

THE joy of the whole company was unspeakable by the happy conclusion of this perplex'd business; Dorothea, Cardenio, and Lucinda thought the sudden change of their affairs too surprizing to be real; and through a disuse of good fortune, could hardly be induced to believe their happiness: Don Ferdinand thank'd heaven a thousand times for its propitious conduct in leading him out of a labyrinth, in which his honour and virtue were like to have been lost. The curate, as  
he

he was very instrumental in the general reconciliation, had likewise no small share in the general joy; and that no discontent might sour their universal satisfaction, Cardenio and the curate engag'd to see the hostess satisfied for all damages committed by Don Quixote: only poor Sancho droop'd pitifully; he found his lordship and his hopes vanish'd into smoke, the princess Micomicona was chang'd to Dorothea, and the giant to Don Ferdinand; thus very musty and melancholy he slipt into his master's chamber, who had slept on, and was just waken'd, little thinking of what had happen'd.

I hope your early rising will do you no hurt, said he, sir knight of the woeful figure; but you may now sleep on till doom's-day if you will; nor need you trouble your head any longer about killing any giant, or restoring the princess, for all that is done to your hand. That's more than probable, answer'd the knight, for I have had the most extraordinary, the most prodigious and bloody battle with the giant, that I ever had, or shall have during the whole course of my life; yet with one cross stroke I laid his head thwack on the ground, whence the great effusion of blood seem'd like a violent stream of water. Of wine you mean, said Sancho, for you must know (if you know it not already) that your worship's dead giant is a broach'd wine-skin, and the blood some thirty gallons of tent which it held in its belly, and your head so cleverly struck off, is the whore my mother; and so the devil take both giant and head, and all together, for Sancho. What say'st thou, mad man? said the Don, thou'rt frantick sure. Rise, rise, sir, said Sancho, and see what fine work you have cut out for yourself; here's the devil-and-all to pay for, and your great queen is chang'd into a private gentlewoman, call'd Dorothea, with some other such odd matters, that you will wonder with a vengeance. I can wonder at nothing here, said Don Quixote, where you may remember I told you all things rul'd by enchantment. I believe it, quoth Sancho, had my tossing in a blanket been of that kind; but sure 'twas the likest a tossing in a blanket of any thing I ever knew in my life. And this  
same

same inn-keeper, I remember very well, was one of those that toss'd me into the air, and as cleverly and heartily he did it as a man could wish, I'll say that for him; so that after all I begin to smell a rat, and do per'lously suspect, that all our enchantment will end in nothing but bruises and broken bones. Heaven will retrieve all, said the knight; I will therefore dress, and march to the discovery of these wonderful transformations. While Sancho made him ready, the curate gave Don Ferdinand and the rest an account of Don Quixote's madness, and of the device he used to draw him from the Poor Rock, to which the suppos'd disdain of his mistress had banish'd him in imagination. Sancho's adventures made also a part in the story, which prov'd very diverting to the strangers. He added, that since Dorothea's change of fortune had balkt their design that way, some other trick should be found to decoy him home: Cardenio offer'd his service in the affair, and that Lucinda should personate Dorothea: No, no (answer'd Don Ferdinand) Dorothea shall humour the jest still, if this honest gentleman's habitation be not very far off. Only two days journey, said the curate: I would ride twice as far (said Don Ferdinand) for the pleasure of so good and charitable an action. By this Don Quixote had sally'd out arm'd cap-a-pee, Mambrino's helmet (with a great hole in it) on his head; his shield on his left arm, and with his right he lean'd on his lance. His meagre yellow weather-beaten face, of half a league in length \*, the unaccountable medley of his armour, together with his grave and solemn port, struck Don Ferdinand and his companions dumb with admiration, while

---

\* *Tho' Don Quixote was very long-visag'd, yet to say his face was half a league in length, is a most extravagant hyperbole even for a Spaniard to make, but yet Cervantes does actually say it; Fernando viendo su rostro de media legua de andadura. Stevens is egregiously mistaken here, he says, Fernando seeing his countenance half a league off.*

the



the champion casting his eyes on Dorothea, with great gravity and solidity, broke silence with these words.

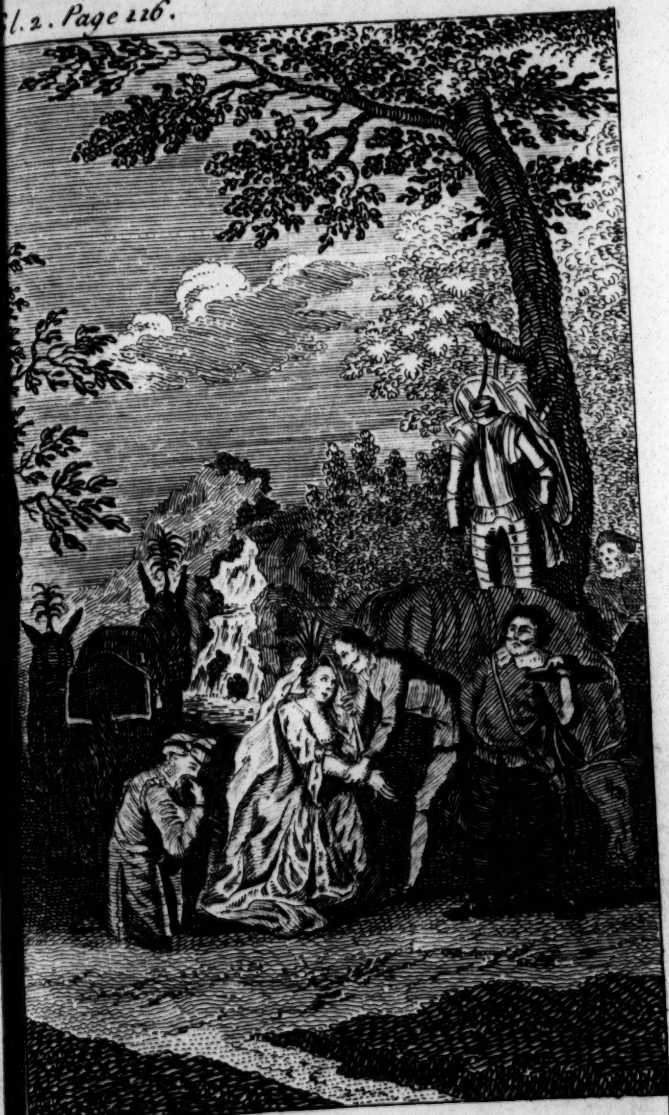
I am inform'd by this my squire, beautiful lady, that your greatness is annihilated, and your majesty reduc'd to nothing, for of a queen and mighty princess, as you us'd to be, you are become a private damsel. If any express order from the necromantic king your father (doubting the ability and success of my arm in the reinstating you) has occasioned this change, I must tell him, that he is no conjurer in these matters, and does not know one half of his trade \*; nor is he skill'd in the revolutions of chivalry: for had he been conversant in the study of knight-errantry as I have been, he might have found, that in every age, champions of less fame than Don Quixote de la Mancha have finish'd more desperate adventures; since the killing of a pitiful giant, how arrogant soever he may be, is no such great achievement; for, not many hours past, I encounter'd one myself; the success I will not mention, lest the incredulity of some people might distrust the reality; but time, the discoverer of all things, will disclose it, when least expected. Hold there, said the host, 'twas with two wine-skins, but no giant that you fought. Don Ferdinand silenc'd the inn-keeper, and bid him by no means interrupt Don Quixote, who thus went on. To conclude, most high and disinherited la'y, if your father, for the causes already mentioned, has caused this metamorphosis in your person, believe him not; for there is no peril on earth, thro' which my sword shall not open a way; and assure yourself that in a few days, by the overthrow of your enemy's head, it shall fix on yours that crown, which is your lawful inheritance. Here Don Quixote stopt, waiting the princess's answer; she, assur'd of Don Ferdinand's consent to carry on the jest, till Don Quixote was got home, and assuming a face of gravity, whosoever (answer'd she) has inform'd

---

\* Literally, one half of the mass, the saying of which is one great part of the priestly office.

you, valorous knight of the woeful figure, that I have alter'd or chang'd my condition, has impos'd upon you ; for I am just the same to day as yesterday ; 'tis true some unexpected, but fortunate accidents, have varied some circumstances of my fortune, much to my advantage, and far beyond my hopes ; but I am neither chang'd in my person, nor alter'd in my resolution of employing the force of your redoubtable and invincible arm in my favour. I therefore apply myself to your usual generosity, to have these words spoken to my father's dishonour recall'd and believe these easy and infallible means to redress my wrongs, the pure effects of his wisdom and policy, as the good fortune I now enjoy, has been the consequence of your surprizing deeds, as this noble presence can testify. What should hinder us then from setting forward to morrow morning, depending for a happy and successful conclusion on the will of heaven, and the power of your unparallel'd courage ?

The ingenious Dorothea having concluded, Don Quixote turning to Sancho, with all the signs of fury imaginable ; now must I tell thee, poor paultry hang-dog (said he) thou art the veriest rascal in all Spain ; tell me, rogue, scoundrel, did not you just now inform me, that this princess was chang'd into a little private damsel, call'd Dorothea, and the head which I lopp'd from the giant's shoulders, was the whore your mother, with a thousand other absurdities ? now, by all the powers of heaven (looking up, and grinding his teeth together) I have a mind so to use thee, as to make thee appear a miserable example to all succeeding squires, that shall dare to tell a knight-errant a lye. Good your worship, cry'd Sancho, have patience, I beseech you : mayhap I am mistaken or so, about my lady princess Micomicona's concern there ; but that the giant's head came off the wine-skins shoulders, and that the blood was as good tent as ever was tipt over tongue, I'll take my corporal oath on't ; Gadzookers sir, are not the skins all hack'd and slash'd within there at your bed's-head, and the wine all in a puddle in your chamber ? But you'll guess at the meat presently, by the sauce ; the proof of the



*The Prince of Micomicon prays Don Quixote to replace her on the Throne.*



the  
lord  
honor  
Don  
thee  
we t  
this  
of u  
secut  
being  
and  
of s  
Don  
the  
pany  
firm  
bloo  
M  
Quin  
stran  
Chri  
short  
no c  
of t  
and  
shou  
clad  
veil  
ish  
The  
ty,

\*  
the  
rbein  
a th  
ir,  
be  
fry

the pudding is in the eating, master \*; and if my landlord here don't let you know it to your cost, he's a very honest and civil fellow, that's all. Sancho, said the Don, I pronounce thee *non compos*, I therefore pardon thee, and have done, 'Tis enough said Don Ferdinand, we therefore, in pursuance of the princess's orders, will this night refresh ourselves, and to-morrow we will all of us set out to attend the Lord Don Quixote, in prosecution of this important enterprize he has undertaken, being all impatient to be eye-witnesses of his celebrated and matchless courage. I shall be proud of the honour of serving and waiting upon you, my good lord, reply'd Don Quixote, and reckon myself infinitely oblig'd by the favour and good opinion of so honourable a company; which I shall endeavour to improve and confirm, though at the expence of the last drop of my blood.

Many other complements had pass'd between Don Quixote and Don Ferdinand, when the arrival of a stranger interrupted them. His dress represented him a Christian newly return'd from Barbary: he was clad in a short-skirted coat of blue cloth, with short sleeves and no collar, his breeches were of blue linen, with a cap of the same colour, a pair of date-colour'd stockings, and a Turkish scimitar hung by a scarf, in manner of a shoulder belt. There rode a woman in his company, clad in a Moorish dress; her face was covered with a veil; she had on a little cap of gold-tissue, and a Turkish mantle that reach'd from her shoulders to her feet. The man was well-shap'd and strong, his age about forty, his face somewhat tann'd, his mustachios long, and

---

\* *The original runs, it will be seen in the frying of the eggs. When eggs are to be fry'd, there is no knowing their goodness till they are broken, Royal Dict. Or, a thief stole a frying-pan, and the woman, who own'd it, meeting him, ask'd him what he was carrying away: he answer'd, you will know when your eggs are to be fry'd.*

his



his beard handsome: in short, his genteel mien and person were too distinguishable, to let the gentleman be hid by the meanness of his habit. He call'd presently for a room, and being answer'd that all were full, seem'd a little troubl'd; however he went to the woman who came along with him, and took her down from her ass. The ladies, being all surpriz'd at the oddness of the Moorish dress, had the curiosity to flock about the stranger, and Dorothea very discreetly imagining that both she and her conductor were tir'd, and took it ill that they could not have a chamber; I hope, madam, you will bear your ill fortune patiently, said she; for want of room is an inconvenience incident to all publick inns: but if you please, madam, to take up with us, pointing to Lucinda, you may perhaps find that you have met with worse entertainment on the road, than what this place affords. The unknown lady made her no answer, but rising up, laid her hands across her breast, bow'd her head, and inclin'd her body, as a sign that she acknowledged the favour. By her silence they conjectur'd her to be undoubtedly a Moor, and that she could not speak Spanish. Her companion was now come back from the stable, and told them; ladies, I hope you will excuse this gentlewoman from answering any questions, for she is very much a stranger to our language. We are only, sir, answer'd Lucinda, making her an offer which civility obliges us to make all strangers, especially of our own sex; that she would make us happy in her company all night, and fare as we do; we will make very much of her, sir, and she shall want for nothing that the house affords. I return you humble thanks, dear madam, answer'd the stranger, in the lady's behalf and my own; and I infinitely prize the favour, which the present exigence and the worth of the donors, make doubly engaging. Is the lady, pray sir, a Christian or a Moor, ask'd Dorothea? our charity would make us hope she were the former; but by her attire and silence we are afraid she is the latter. Outwardly, madam, answers he, she appears and is a Moor, but in her heart a zealous Christian, which her longing desires

of

of being baptiz'd have expressly testified. I have had no opportunity of having her christen'd since she left Algiers, which was her habitation and native country; nor has any imminent danger of death as yet oblig'd her to be brought to the font, before she be better instructed in the principles of our religion; but, I hope by heaven's assistance, to have her shortly baptiz'd with all the decency suiting her quality, which is much above what her equipage or mine seem to promise.

These words rais'd in them all a curiosity to be farther inform'd who the Moor and her conductor were; but they thought it improper then to put them upon any more particular relation of their fortunes, because they wanted rest and refreshment after their journey. Dorothea placing the lady by her, begg'd her to take off her veil. She look'd on her companion, as if she requir'd him to let her know what she said; which, when he had let her understand in the Arabian tongue, joining his own request also, she discover'd so charming a face, that Dorothea imagin'd her more beautiful than Lucinda; she on the other hand, fancy'd her handsomer than Dorothea; and most of the company believ'd her more beautiful than both of 'em. As beauty has always a prerogative, or rather charm, to attract men's inclinations, the whole company dedicated their desires to serve the lovely Moor. Don Ferdinand ask'd the stranger her name, he answer'd Lela Zoraida; she hearing him, and guessing what they ask'd, suddenly reply'd with great concern, tho' very gracefully, no, no Zoraida, Maria, Maria; giving them to understand, that her name was Maria and not Zoraida. These words, spoken with so much eagerness, rais'd a concern in every body, the ladies especially, whose natural tenderness shew'd itself by their tears; and Lucinda embracing her very lovingly, ay, ay, said she, Maria, Maria, which words the Moorish lady repeated by way of answer. Zoraida Macange, added she, as much as to say, not Zoraida, but Maria, Maria. The night coming on, and the inn-keeper, by order of Don Ferdinand's Friends, having made haste to provide them the best supper he

could, the cloth was laid on a long table, there being neither round nor square in the house. Don Quixote, after much ceremony, was prevail'd upon to sit at the head, he desir'd the lady Micomicona to sit next to him; and the rest of the company having placed themselves according to their rank and convenience, they eat their supper very heartily. Don Quixote, to raise the diversion, never minded his meat, but inspir'd with the same spirit that mov'd him to preach so much to the goat-herds, he began to hold forth in this manner. Certainly, gentlemen, if we rightly consider it, those who make knight-errantry their profession, often meet with most surprizing and stupendous adventures. For what mortal in the world, at this time entring within this castle, and seeing us sit together as we do, will imagine and believe us to be the same persons which in reality we are? who is there that can judge, that this lady by my side is the great queen we all know her to be, and that I am that knight of the woeful figure, so universally made known by fame? It is then no longer to be doubted, but that this exercise and profession surpasses all others that have been invented by man, and is so much the more honourable, as it is more expos'd to dangers. Let none presume to tell me that the pen is preferable to the sword; for be they who they will, I shall tell them they know not what they say: for the reason they give, and on which chiefly they rely, is, that the labour of the mind exceeds that of the body, and that the exercise of arms depends only on the body, as if the use of them were the business of porters, which requires nothing but much strength. Or, as if this, which we who profess it call chivalry, did not include the acts of fortitude, which depend very much upon the understanding. Or else, as if that warrior, who commands an army or defends a city besieg'd, did not labour as much with the mind as with the body. If this be not so, let experience teach us whether it be possible by bodily strength to discover or guess the intentions of an enemy. The forming designs, laying of stratagems, overcoming of difficulties,

and

and shunning of dangers, are all works of the understanding, wherein the body has no share. It being therefore evident, that the exercise of arms requires the help of the mind as well as learning, let us see in the next place, whether the scholar or the soldier's mind undergoes the greatest labour. Now this may be the better known, by regarding the end and object each of them aims at; for that intention is to be most valued, which makes the noblest end its object. The scope and end of learning. I mean, human learning (in this place I speak not of divinity, whose aim is to guide souls to heaven, for no other can equal a design so infinite as that) is to give a perfection to distributive justice, bestowing upon every one his due, and to procure and cause good laws to be observ'd; an end really generous, great, and worthy of high commendation; but yet not equal to that which knight-errantry tends to, whose object and end is peace, which is the greatest blessing man can wish for in this life. And therefore the first good news the world receiv'd, was that the angels brought in the night, which was the beginning of our day, when they sang in the air, glory to god on high, peace upon earth, and to men good-will. And the only manner of salutation taught by the best master in heaven, or upon earth, to his friends and favourites, was, that entering any house they should say, peace be to this house. And at other times he said to them, my peace I give to you, my peace I leave to you, peace be among you. A jewel and legacy worthy of such a donor, a jewel so precious, that without it there can be no happiness either in earth or heaven. This peace is the true end of war; for arms and war are one and the same thing. Allowing then this truth, that the end of war is peace, and that in this it excels the end of learning, let us now weigh the bodily labours the scholar undergoes, against those the warrior suffers, and then see which are greatest. The method and language Don Quixote us'd in delivering himself were such, that none of his hearers at that time look'd upon him as a mad-man. But on the contrary, most

of them being gentlemen, to whom the use of arms properly appertains, they gave him a willing attention: and he proceeded in this manner. These, then, I say, are the sufferings and hardships a scholar endures. First, poverty, (not that they are all poor, but to urge the worst that may be in this case) and having said he endures poverty, methinks nothing more need be urg'd to express his misery; for he that is poor enjoys no happiness, but labours under this poverty in all its parts, at one time in hunger, at another in cold, another in nakedness, and sometimes in all of them together, yet his poverty is not so great, but still he eats, though it be later than the usual hour, and of the scraps of the rich, or, which is the greatest of a scholar's misfortunes, what is call'd among them *going a sopping* \*; neither can the scholar miss of somebody's stove or fire-side to sit by, where, though he be not thoroughly heated, yet he may gather warmth, and at last sleep away the night under a roof. I will not touch upon other less material circumstances, as the want of linen, and scarcity of shoes, thinness and baldness of their clothes, and their surfeiting when good fortune throws a feast in their way: this is the difficult and uncouth path they tread, often stumbling and falling, yet rising again and pushing on, till they attain the preferment they aim at; whither being arriv'd, we have seen many of them, who, having been carried by a fortunate gale through all these quick-sands, from a chair govern the world; their hunger being chang'd into satiety, their cold into comfortable warmth, their nakedness into magnificence of apparel, and the mat they us'd to lie upon, into stately beds of costly silks and softest linen, a reward due to their virtue. But yet their sufferings being compar'd with those the soldier endures, appear much inferior, as I shall in the next place make out.

---

\* The author means the sops in porridge, giu'n at the doors of monasteries.



\*\*\*\*\*

CHAP. XI.

*A continuation of Don Quixote's curious discourse upon arms and learning.*

SINCE, speaking of the scholar, we began with his poverty, and its several parts, continued Don Quixote, let us now observe whether the soldier be any thing richer than he; and we shall find that poverty itself is not poorer; for he depends on his miserable pay, which he receives but seldom, or perhaps never; or else in that he makes by marauding, with the hazard of his life, and trouble of his conscience. Such is sometimes his want of apparel, that a slash'd buff-coat is all his holiday raiment and shirt; and in the depth of winter being in the open field, he has nothing to cherish him against the sharpness of the season, but the breath of his mouth, which issuing from an empty place, I am perswaded is it self cold, though contrary to the rules of nature. But now see how he expects night to make amends for all these hardships in the bed prepar'd for him, which unless it be his own fault, never proves too narrow; for he may freely lay out as much of the ground, as he pleases, and tumble to his content, without danger of losing the sheets. But above all when the day shall come, wherein he is to put in practice the exercise of his profession, and strive to gain some new degree, when the day of battle shall come, then, as a mark of his honour, shall his head be dignified with a cap made of lint, to stop a hole made by a bullet, or be perhaps carried off maim'd, at the expence of a leg or an arm. And if this do not happen, but that merciful heaven preserve his life and limbs, it may fall out that he shall remain as poor as before, and must run through many encounters and battles, nay always come

off victorious, to obtain some little preferment; and these miracles too are rare: but, I pray tell me, gentlemen, if ever you made it your observation, how few are those who obtain due rewards in war, in comparison of those numbers that perish? doubtless you will answer, that there is no parity between them; that the dead cannot be reckon'd up, whereas, those who live and are rewarded, may be number'd with three figures\*. It is quite otherwise with scholars, not only those who follow the law, but others also, who all either by hook or by crook get a livelihood, so that tho' the soldier's sufferings be much greater, yet his reward is much less. To this it may be answer'd, that it is easier to reward two thousand scholars, than thirty thousand soldiers, because the former are recompens'd at the expence of the publick, by given them employments, which of necessity must be allow'd on those of their profession, but the latter cannot be gratified otherwise than at the cost of the master that employs them; yet this very difficulty makes good my argument. But let us lay this matter aside, as a point difficult to be decided, and let us return to the preference due to arms above learning, a subject as yet in debate, each party bringing strong reasons to make out their pretensions. Among others, learning urges, that without it warfare itself could not subsist; because war, as other things, has its laws, and is governed by them, and laws are the province of learning and scholars. To this objection the soldiers make answer, that without them the laws cannot be maintain'd, for it is by arms that commonwealths are defended, kingdoms supported, cities secur'd, the high-way made safe, and the sea deliver'd from pirates. In short, were it not for them, commonwealths, kingdoms, monarchies, cities, the roads by land, and the waters of the sea, would be subject to the ravages and confusion that attends war while it lasts and is at liberty to make use of its unbounded power, and prerogative. Besides, it is

---

\* i. e. Do not exceed hundreds.

past all controversy, that what costs dearest, is, and ought most to be valu'd. Now for a man to attain to an eminent degree in learning costs him time, watching, hunger, nakedness, dizziness in the head, weakness in the stomach, and other inconveniencies, which are the consequences of these, of which I have already in part made mention. But the rising gradually to be a good soldier, is purchas'd at the whole expence of all that is requir'd for learning, and that in so surpassing a degree, that there is no comparison betwixt them; because he is every moment in danger of his life. To what danger or distress can a scholar be reduc'd equal to that of a soldier, who, being besieg'd in some strong place, and at his post or upon guard in some ravelin or bastion, perceives the enemy carrying on a mine under him, and yet must upon no account remove from thence, or shun the danger which threatens him so near? all he can do, is, to give notice to his commander, that he may countermine, but must himself stand still, fearing and expecting when on a sudden he shall soar to the clouds without wings, and be again cast down headlong against his will. If this danger seem inconsiderable, let us see whether that be not greater when two gallies shock one another with their prows in the midst of the spacious sea. When they have thus grappled, and are clinging together, the soldier is confin'd to the narrow beak, being a board not above two foot wide; and yet though he sees before him so many ministers of death threatening, as there are pieces of cannon on the other side pointing against him, and not half a pike's length from his body; and being sensible that the first slip of his feet sends him to the bottom of Neptune's dominions; still, for all this, inspir'd by honour, with an undaunted heart, he stands a mark to so much fire, and endeavours to make his way, by that narrow passage, into the enemy's vessel. But what is most to be admir'd is, that no sooner one falls, where he shall never rise till the end of the world, than another steps into the same place; and if he also drops into the sea, which lies in wait for him like an enemy, another, and after him another still fills

fills up the place, without suffering any interval of time to separate their deaths; a resolution and boldness scarce to be parallel'd in any other trials of war. Blessed be those happy ages that were strangers to the dreadful fury of these devilish instruments of artillery, whose inventor I am satisfy'd is now in hell, receiving the reward of his cursed invention, which is the cause that very often a cowardly base hand takes away the life of the bravest gentleman, and that in the midst of that vigour and resolution which animates and inflames the bold, a chance bullet (shot perhaps by one that fled, and was frighted at the very flash the mischievous piece gave, when it went off) coming no body knows how, or from whence, in a moment puts a period to the brave designs, and the life of one, that deserv'd to have surviv'd many years. This consider'd, I could almost say, I am sorry at my heart for having taken upon me this profession of a knight-errant, in so detestable an age; for tho' no danger daunts me, yet it effects me to think, whether powder and lead may not deprive me of the opportunity of becoming famous, and making myself known throughout the world by the strength of my arm and dint of my sword. But let heaven order matters as it pleases, for if I compass my designs, I shall be so much the more honour'd by how much the dangers I have expos'd myself to, are greater than those the knights-errant of former ages underwent. All this long preamble Don Quixote made, whilst the company supp'd, never minding to eat a mouthful, though Sancho Panza had several times advis'd him to mind his meat, telling him there would be time enough afterwards to talk as he thought fit. Those who heard him were afresh mov'd with compassion, to see a man, who seem'd in all other respects, to have a sound judgment and clear understanding, so absolutely mad and distracted, when any mention was made of his curs'd knight-errantry. The curate told him, he was much in the right, in all he had said for the honour of arms; and that he, though a scholar, and a graduate, was of the same opinion. Supper being ended and the cloth taken away, whilst the

of  
the inn  
fitted  
might  
treated  
confe  
light  
ing w  
willin  
fear'd  
tion  
obey  
and  
stand  
man  
you  
your  
happ  
are  
all  
strie  
voic



tu  
ri  
p  
h  
t  
a  
h

the inn-keeper, his wife, his daughter, and Maritornes, fitted up Don Quixote's loft for the ladies, that they might lie by themselves that night, Don Ferdinand intreated the slave to give them an account of his life ; conscious the relation could not choose but be very delightful and surprizing, as might be guess'd by his coming with Zoraida. The slave answer'd, he would most willingly comply with their desires, and that he only fear'd the relation would not give them all the satisfaction he could wish ; but that however rather than disobey, he would do it as well as he could. The curate and all the company thank'd him, and made fresh instances to the same effect. Seeing himself courted by so many, there is no need of intreaties, said he, for what you may command ; therefore, continu'd he, give me your attention, and you shall hear a true relation, perhaps not to be parallel'd by those fabulous stories which are compos'd with much art and study. This caus'd all the company to seat themselves, and observe a very strict silence ; and then with an agreeable and sedate voice, he began in this manner.



C H A P. XII.

*Where the captive relates his life and adventures.*

**I**N the mountains of Leon my family had its first original, and was more kindly dealt withal by nature than by fortune, though my father might pass for rich among the inhabitants of those parts who are but poorly provided for ; to say truth, he had been so, had he had as much industry to preserve, as he had inclination to dissipate his income ; but he had been a soldier, and the years of his youth spent in that employment, had left him in his old age a propensity to spend, under the name of liberality. War is a school where the covetous grow free, and the free prodigal : to see a soldier a miser,



miser, is a kind of prodigy which happens but seldom. My father was far from being one of them; for he pass'd the bounds of liberality, and came very near the excesses of prodigality; a thing which cannot suit well with a marry'd life, where the children ought to succeed to the estate, as well as name of the family. We were three of us, all at man's estate; and my father, finding that the only way (as he said) to curb his squandering inclination, was to dispossess himself of that which maintain'd it, his estate (without which Alexander himself must have been put to't) he call'd us one day all three to him in his chamber, and spoke to us in the following manner.

My sons, to persuade you that I love you, I need only tell you I am your father, and you my children; and on the other side, you have reason to think me unkind, considering how careless I am in preserving what should one day be yours; but to convince you, however, that I have the bowels of a parent, I have taken a resolution, which I have well weigh'd and consider'd for many days. You are all now of an age to chuse the kind of life you each of you incline to; or, at least, to enter upon some employment that may one day procure you both honour and profit: therefore I design to divide all I have into four parts, of which I will give three among you, and retain the fourth for myself, to maintain me in my old age, as long as it shall please heaven to continue me in this life. After that each of you shall have receiv'd his part, I could wish you would follow one of the employments I shall mention to you, every one as he finds himself inclin'd. There is a proverb in our tongue, which I take to contain a great deal of truth, as generally those sorts of sayings do, being short sentences fram'd upon observation and long experience. This proverb runs thus, *Either the church, the sea, or the court.* As if it should plainly say, that whosoever desires to thrive must follow one of these three; either be a church-man, or a merchant and try his fortune at sea, or enter into the service of his prince in the court: for another proverb says, that *King's chaff is*  
better

*better than other mens corn.* I say this, because I would have one of you follow his studies, another I desire should be a merchant, and the third should serve the King in his wars; because it is a thing of some difficulty to get an entrance at court; and though war does not immediately procure riches, yet it seldom fails of giving honour and reputation. Within eight days time I will give each of you your portion, and not wrong you of a farthing of it, as you shall see by experience. Now therefore tell me if you are resolv'd to follow my advice about your settling in the world. And turning to me, as the eldest, he bid me answer first. I told him, that he ought not upon our account to divide or lessen his estate, or way of living; that we were young men and could shift in the world; and at last I concluded, that for my part I would be a soldier, and serve God and the King in that honourable profession. My second brother made the same regardful offer, and chose to go to the Indies; resolving to lay out in goods the share that should be given him here. The youngest, and I believe, the wisest of us all, said he would be a church-man; and in order to it, go to Salamanca, and there finish his studies. After this, my father embrac'd us all three, and in a few days perform'd what he had promis'd; and, as I remember, it was three thousand ducats a-piece, which he gave us in money; for we had an uncle who bought all the estate, and paid for it in ready money, that it might not go out of the family. A little after, we all took leave of my father; and at parting I could not forbear thinking it a kind of inhumanity to leave the old gentleman in so straight a condition: I prevail'd with him therefore to accept of two thousand of my three, the remainder being sufficient to make up a soldier's equipage. My example work'd upon my other brothers, and they each of them presented him with a thousand ducats; so that my father remain'd with four thousand ducats in ready money, and three thousand more in land, which he chose to keep, and not sell out-right. To be short, we took our last leave of my father and the uncle I have mention'd, not without much grief and tears on all sides.

They particularly recommending to us to let them know, by all opportunities, our good or ill fortunes ; we promis'd so to do, and having receiv'd the blessing of our old father, one of us went straight to Salamanca, the other to Sevil, and I to Alicant, where I was inform'd of a Genoese ship, which was loading wood for Genoa.

This year makes two and twenty since I first left my father's house, and in all that time, tho' I have writ several letters I have not had the least news, either of him, or of my brothers. And now I will relate, in few words, my own adventures in all that course of years. I took shipping at Alicant, arriv'd safe and with a good passage at Genoa, from thence I went to Milan, where I bought my equipage, resolving to go and enter myself in the army in Piedmont ; but being come as far as Alexandria de la Paille, I was inform'd that the great duke of Alva was passing into Flanders with an army ; this made me alter my first resolution. I follow'd him, and was present at all his engagements, as well as at the deaths of the Counts Egmont and Horne ; and at last I had a pair of colours under a famous captain of Guadajajara, whose name was Diego de Urbina. Some time after my arrival in Flanders, there came news of the league concluded by Pope Pius V. of happy memory in-conjunction with Spain, against the common enemy the Turk, who at that time had taken the island of Cyprus from the Venetians ; which was an unfortunate and lamentable loss to Christendom. It was also certain, that the General of this holy league was the most serene Don Juan of Austria, natural brother to our good King Don Philip. The great fame of the preparations for this war excited in me a vehement desire of being present at the engagement, which was expected to follow these preparations ; and although I had certain assurance, and, as it were, an earnest of my being advanc'd to be a captain upon the first vacancy : yet I resolv'd to leave all those expectations, and return, as I did, to Italy. My good fortune was such, that I arriv'd just about the same time that Don Juan of Austria landed at Genoa, in order to go to Naples, and join the Venetian  
fleet,

fleet, as he did at Messina. In short, I was at that great action of the battle of Lepanto, being a captain of foot, to which post my good fortune, more than my desert, had now advanc'd me; and that day, which was so happy to all Christendom (because the world was then disabus'd of the error they had entertain'd, that the Turk was invincible by sea) that day, I say, in which the pride of the Ottomans was first broke, and which was so happy to all Christians, even to those who dy'd in the fight, who were more so than those who remain'd alive and conquerors, I alone was the unhappy man; since, instead of a naval crown, which I might have hop'd for in the time of the Romans, I found myself that very night a slave, with irons on my feet, and manacles on my hands. The thing happen'd thus: Vehali, King of Algiers, a brave and bold pirate, having boarded and taken the Capitana galley of Malta, in which only three knights were left alive, and those desperately wounded, the galley of John Andrea Doria bore up to succour them; in this galley I was embark'd with my company, and doing my duty on this occasion, I leap'd into the enemy's galley, which getting loose from ours, that intended to board the Algerine, my soldiers were hindred from following me, and I remain'd alone among a great number of enemies; whom not being able to resist, I was taken after having receiv'd several wounds; and as you have heard already, Vehali having escap'd with all his squadron, I found myself his prisoner; and was the only afflicted man among so many joyful ones, and the only captive among so many free; for on that day above 15000 Christians, who row'd in the Turkish galleys, obtain'd their long-wish'd-for liberty. I was carry'd to Constantinople, where the Grand Signor Selim made Vehali, my master, general of the sea, he having behav'd himself very well in the battle, and brought away with him the great flag of the order of Malta, as a proof of his valour.

The second year of my captivity, I was a slave in the Capitana galley at Navarino; and I took notice of the Christians fault, in letting slip the opportunity they had

of taking the whole Turkish fleet in that port ; and all the Janisaries and Algerine pirates did so expect to be attack'd, that they had made all in readiness to escape on shore without fighting ; so great was the terror they had of our fleet : but it pleas'd God to order it otherwise, not by any fault of the Christian General, but for the sins of Christendom, and because it is his will we should always have some enemies to chastise us. Vehali made his way to Modon, which is an island not far from Navarino, and there landing his men, fortify'd the entrance of the harbour, remaining in safety there till Don Juan was forc'd to return home with his fleet. In this expedition, the galley called La Presa, of which Barbarossa's own son was captain, was taken by the admiral galley of Naples, call'd the Wolf, which was commanded by that thunder-bolt of war, that father of the soldiers, that happy and never conquer'd captain, Don Alvaro de Bazan, marquis of Santa Cruz ; and I cannot omit the manner of taking this galley. The son of Barbarossa was very cruel, and us'd his slaves with great inhumanity ; they perceiving that the Wolf-galley got of them in the chace, all of a sudden laid by their oars, and seizing on their commander, as he was walking between them on the deck, and calling to them to row hard ; they pass'd him on from hand to hand to one another, from one end of the galley to the other, and gave him such blows in the handling him, that before he got back to the main-mast, his soul had left his body, and was fled to hell. This, as I said, was the effect of his cruelty, and their hatred.

After this we return'd to Constantinople ; and the next year, which was 1573, news came that Don Juan of Austria had taken Tunis and its kingdom from the Turks, and given the possession of it to Muley Hamed, having thereby defeated all the hopes of reigning of Muley Hamida, one of the cruelest, and withal one of the bravest Moors in the world. The Grand Seignor was troubled at this loss, and, using his wonted artifices with the Christians, he struck up a peace with the

the

of  
the V  
of it.

The  
Gole  
not ab  
I was  
least,  
ransom  
news  
were  
army  
40000  
with f  
neers,  
fort, y  
taken,  
was n  
that c  
found  
trench  
water  
above  
filling  
ther,  
comm  
shew  
nion  
the G  
out to  
witho  
if in  
and  
never  
those  
place

\*

truen  
took i



the Venetians, who were much more desirous than he of it.

The year after, which was 1574, he attack'd the Goletta, and the fort which Don Juan had begun, but not above half finish'd, before Tunis. All this while I was a galley-slave, without any hopes of liberty; at least, I could not promise myself to obtain it by way of ransom; for I was resolv'd not to write my father the news of my misfortune. \* La Goletta and the fort were both taken, after some resistance; the Turkish army consisting of 75000 Turks in pay, and above 400000 Moors and Arabs out of all Africa near the sea; with such provisions of war of all kinds, and so many pioneers, that they might have cover'd the Goletta and the fort, with earth by handfuls. The Goletta was first taken, tho' always before reputed impregnable; and it was not lost by any fault of its defenders, who did all that could be expected from them; but because it was found by experience, that it was practicable to make trenches in that sandy soil, which was thought to have water under it within two foot, but the Turks sunk above two yards and found none; by which means filling sacks with sand, and laying them on one another, they rais'd them so high, that they over-topt and commanded the fort, in which none could be safe, nor shew themselves upon the walls. It has been the opinion of most men, that we did ill to shut ourselves up in the Goletta; and that we ought to have been drawn out to hinder their landing; but they who say so, talk without experience, and at random, of such things; for if in all there were not above 7000 men in the Goletta and the fort, how could so small a number, though never so brave, take the open field against such forces as those of the enemies? And how is it possible that a place can avoid being taken, which can have no relief,

---

\* *The Goletta is a fortress in the Mediterranean; between that sea and the lake of Tunis: In 1535, Charles V. took it by storm.*

particularly being besieg'd by such numbers, and those in their own country? But it seem'd to many others, and that is also my opinion, that God Almighty favour'd Spain most particularly, in suffering that sink of iniquity and misery, as well as that sponge and perpetual drain of treasure to be destroy'd. For infinite sums of money were spent there to no purpose, without any other design, than to preserve the memory of one of the emperor's (Charles the fifth's) conquests; as if it had been necessary to support the eternity of his glory (which will be permanent) that those stones should remain in being. The fort was likewise lost, but the Turks got it foot by foot; for the soldiers who defended it, sustain'd two and twenty assaults, and in them kill'd above 25000 of those Barbarians; and when it was taken, of 300 which were left alive, there was not one man unwounded; a certain sign of the bravery of the garrison, and of their skill in defending places. There was likewise taken, by composition, a small fort in the midst of a lake, which was under the command of Don John Zanguerra, a gentleman of Valencia, and a soldier of great renown. Don Pedro Puerto Carrero, General of the Goletta, was taken prisoner, and was so afflicted at the loss of the place, that he dy'd of grief by the way, before he got to Constantinople, whither they were carrying him. They took also prisoner the commander of the fort, whose name was Gabriel Cerbellon, a Milanese, and a great engineer, as well as a valiant soldier. Several persons of quality were killed in those two fortresses, and amongst the rest was Pagan Doria, the brother of the famous John Andrea Doria, a generous and noble-hearted gentleman, as well appear'd by his liberality to that brother; and that which made his death more worthy of compassion, was, that he receiv'd it from some Arabs, to whom he had committed his safety after the loss of the fort, they having promis'd to carry him disguis'd in a Moor's habit to Tabarca, which is a small fort held on that coast by the Genoeses, for the diving for coral; but they cut off his head, and brought it to the Turkish General, who made good to them

9  
them  
the tr  
up in  
Am  
there  
Anda  
brave  
talen  
ferti  
chain  
made  
and  
havin  
rath  
tive  
upon  
talk  
on  
tell  
who  
aafv  
in C  
Arr  
not  
I b  
fam  
tur  
I c  
Pe  
hor  
tha  
on  
tha  
ad  
me  
th  
—  
ja

them our Spanish proverb, that the treason pleases, but the traitors are odious; for he order'd them to be hang'd up immediately, for not having brought him alive. Amongst the Christians which were taken in the fort, there was one Don Pedro de Aguilar, of some place in Andalusia, and who was an ensign in the place; a very brave, and a very ingenious man, and one who had a rare talent in poetry. I mention him, because it was his fortune to be a slave in the same galley with me, and chain'd to the same bench. Before he left the port he made two sonnets, by way of epitaph for the Goletta and the fort, which I must beg leave to repeat here, having learn'd them by heart, and I believe they will rather divert than tire the company. When the captive nam'd Don Pedro de Aguilar, Don Ferdinand look'd upon his companions, and they all smil'd; and when he talk'd of the sonnets, one of them said, before you go on to repeat the sonnets, I desire, sir, you would tell me what became of that Don Pedro de Aguilar, whom you have mention'd. All that I know of him, answer'd the slave, is, that after having been two years in Constantinople, he made his escape, disguis'd like an Arnaut †, and in company of a Greek spy; but I cannot tell whether he obtain'd his liberty or no, though I believe he did, because about a year after I saw the same Greek in Constantinople, but had not an opportunity to ask him about the success of his journey. Then I can tell you, reply'd the gentleman, that the Don Pedro you speak of is my brother, and is at present at home, marry'd, rich, and has three children. God be thank'd, said the slave, for the favours he has bestow'd on him; for in my mind there is no felicity equal to that of recovering ones lost liberty; and moreover, added the same gentleman, I can say the sonnets you mention'd, which my brother made. Pray say them then, reply'd the slave, for I question not but you

---

† *A trooper of Epirus, Dalmatia, or some of the adjacent countries.*

can repeat them better than I. With all my heart, answer'd the gentleman. That upon the Goletta was thus.



### CHAP. XIII.

*The story of the captive continu'd.*

#### A SONNET.

- " **B**LEST souls, discharg'd of life's oppressive weight  
 " Whose virtue prov'd your pass-port to the skies:  
 " You there procur'd a more propitious fate,  
 " When for your faith you bravely fell to rise.
- " When pious rage, diffus'd thro' ev'ry vein,  
 " On this ungrateful shore inflam'd your blood;  
 " Each drop you lost, was bought with crowds of slain,  
 " Whose vital purple swell'd the neighb'ring flood.
- " Tho' crush'd by ruins, and by odds, you claim  
 " That perfect glory, that immortal fame,  
 " Which, like true heroes, nobly you pursu'd;  
 " On these you seiz'd, even when of life depriv'd,  
 " For still your courage even your lives surviv'd;  
 " And sure 'tis conquest thus to be subdu'd.

I know it's just as you repeat it, said the captive:  
 well then, said the gentleman, I'll give you now that  
 which was made upon the fort, if I can remember it.

#### A SONNET.

- " **A**MIDST these barren fields, and ruin'd towers,  
 " The bed of honour of the falling brave,  
 " Three thousand champions of the Christian pow'rs  
 " Found a new life, and triumph in the grave.

" Long

- " Long did their arms their haughty foes repel,  
" Yet strew'd the fields with slaughter'd heaps in vain ;  
" O'ercome by toils, the pious heroes fell,  
" Or but surviv'd more nobly to be slain.
- " This dismal soil, so fam'd in ills of old,  
" In ev'ry age was fatal to the bold,  
" The seat of horror, and the warrior's tomb !  
" Yet hence to heav'n more worth was ne'er resign'd,  
" Than these display'd ; nor has the earth combin'd,  
" Resum'd more noble bodies in her womb.

The sonnets were applauded, and the captive was pleas'd to hear such good news of his friend and companion : after that he pursu'd his relation in these terms ; the Turks order'd the dismantling of the Goletta, the fort being raz'd to their hand by the siege ; and yet the mines they made could not blow up the old walls, which nevertheless were always thought the weakest part of the place ; but the new fortifications, made by the engineer Fratin, came easily down. In fine, the Turkish fleet return'd in triumph to Constantinople, where not long after my master Vehali dy'd, whom the Turks us'd to call Vehali Fartax, which in Turkish signifies the scabby renegade, as indeed he was ; and the Turks give names among themselves, either from some virtue or some defect that is in them ; and this happens, because there are but four families descended from the Ottoman family ; all the rest, as I have said, take their names from some defect of the body, or some good quality of the mind. This scabby slave was at the oar in one of the Grand Signior's galleys for fourteen years, till he was four and thirty years old ; at which time he turn'd renegade, to be reveng'd of a Turk who gave him a box on the ear, as he was chain'd to the oar, forsaking his religion for his revenge ; after which he shew'd so much valour and conduct, that he came to be King of Algiers, and Admiral of the Turkish fleet, which is the third command in the whole empire. He  
was



was a Calabrian by birth, and of a mild disposition towards his slaves, as also of good morals to the rest of the world. He had above 3000 slaves of his own, all which after his death were divided, as he had order'd by his will, between the Grand Signor, his sons and his renegades. I fell to the share of a Venetian renegade, who was a cabin-boy in a Venetian ship which was taken by Vahali, who lov'd him so, that he was one of his favourite boys; and he came at last to prove one of the cruelest renegades that ever was known. His name was Azanaga, and he obtain'd such riches, as to rise by them to be King of Algiers; and with him I left Constantinople, with some satisfaction to think, at least, that I was in a place so near Spain, not because I could give advice to any friend of my misfortune, but because I hop'd to try whether I should succeed better in Algiers than I had done in Constantinople, where I had try'd a thousand ways of running away, but could never execute any of them, which I hop'd I should compass better in Algiers, for hopes never forsook me upon all the disappointments I met with in the design of recovering my liberty. By this means I kept myself alive, shut up in a prison or house, which the Turks call a bagnio, where they keep their Christian slaves, as well those of the King, as those who belong to private persons, and also those who are call'd El Almacen, that is, who belong to the publick, and are employ'd by the city in works that belong to it. These latter do very difficultly obtain their liberty; for having no particular master, but belonging to the publick, they can find no body to treat with about their ransom, though they have money to pay it. The King's slaves, which are ransomable, are not oblig'd to go out to work as the others do, except their ransom stays too long before it comes; for then to hasten it, they make them work, and fetch wood with the rest, which is no small labour. I was one of those who were to be ransom'd; for when they knew I had been a captain, though I told them the impossibility I was in of being redeem'd, because of my poverty, yet they

they put me among the gentlemen that were to be ransom'd, and to that end they put me on a slight chain, rather as a mark of distinction, than to restrain me by it; and so I pass'd my life in that bagnio, with several other gentlemen of quality, who expected their ransom; and tho' hunger and nakedness might, as it did often, afflict us, yet nothing gave us such affliction, as to hear and see the excessive cruelties with which our master us'd the other Christian slaves; he would hang one one day, then impale another, cut off the ears of a third; and this upon such slight occasions, that often the Turks would own, that he did it only for the pleasure of doing it, and because he was naturally an enemy to mankind. Only one Spanish soldier knew how to deal with him, his name was Saavedra; who tho' he had done many things which will not easily be forgotten by the Turks, yet all to gain his liberty, his master never gave him a blow, nor us'd him ill either in word or deed; and yet we were always afraid that the least of his pranks would make him be impal'd; nay, he himself sometimes was afraid of it too: and if it were not for taking up too much of your time, I could tell such passages of him, as would divert the company much better than the relation of my adventures, and cause more wonder in them. But to go on; I say that the windows of a very rich Moor's house look'd upon the court of our prison; which indeed, according to the custom of the country, were rather peeping-holes than windows, and yet they had also lattices or jealousies on the inside. It happen'd one day, that being upon a kind of terras of our prison, with only three of my comrades, diverting ourselves as well as we could, by trying who could leap farthest in his chains, all the other Christians being gone out to work, I chanc'd to look up to those windows, and saw that out of one of them there appear'd a long cane, and to it was a bit of Linen ty'd, and the cane was mov'd up and down, as if it had expected that some of us should lay hold of it. We all took notice of it, and one of us went and stood

just

just under it, to see if they would let it fall; but just as he came to it, the cane was drawn up, and shak'd to and fro sideways, as if they had made the same sign, as people do with their head when they deny. He retir'd upon that, and the same motion was made with it as before. Another of my comrades advanc'd, and had the same success as the former; the third man was us'd just as the rest; which I seeing, resolv'd to try my fortune too; and as I came under the cane, it fell at my feet: immediately I unt'y'd the linen, within which was a knot, which being open'd, shew'd us about ten Zianins, which is a sort of gold of base allay, us'd by the Moors, each of which is worth about two crowns of our money. 'Tis not to be much question'd, whether the discovery was not as pleasant as surprizing; we were in admiration, and I more particularly, not being able to guess whence this good fortune came to us, especially to me; for 'twas plain I was more meant than any of my comrades, since the cane was let go to me when it was refus'd to them. I took my money, broke the cane, and going upon the terras saw a very fine white hand that open'd and shut the window with haste. By this we imagin'd that some woman who liv'd in that house had done us this favour; and to return our thanks, we bow'd ourselves after the Moorish fashion, with our arms cross our breasts. A little after there appear'd out of the same window, a little cross made of cane, which immediately was pull'd in again. This confirm'd us in our opinion, that some Christian woman was a slave in that house, and that it was she that took pity on us; but the whiteness of the hand, and the richness of the bracelets upon the arm, which we had a glimpse of, seem'd to destroy that thought again; and then we believ'd it was some Christian woman turn'd Mahometan, whom their masters often marry, and think themselves very happy; for our women are more valu'd by them than the women of their own country. But in all this guessing we were far enough from finding out the truth of the case; however, we resolv'd to be very diligent

diligent  
star. T  
either t  
though  
who l  
Christi  
discove  
to one  
Agime  
is an o  
least  
of tha  
again,  
and th  
any o  
as th  
cane  
found  
writt  
great  
retur  
renc  
that  
rem  
pen'  
of t  
it v  
pret  
wh  
gav  
wa  
for  
the  
per  
ma  
is  
Ch  
far  
fid  
ap

diligent in observing the window, which was our north-star. There pass'd above fifteen days before we saw either the hand or cane, or any other sign whatsoever; though in all that time we endeavour'd to find out who liv'd in that house, and if there were in it any Christian woman who was a renegade; yet all we could discover amounted to only this, that the house belong'd to one of the chief Moors, a very rich man, call'd Agimorato, who had been Alcayde of the Pata, which is an office much valu'd among them. But when we least expected our golden shower would continue, out of that window we saw on a sudden the cane appear again, with another piece of linen, and a bigger knot; and this was just at a time when the bagnio was without any other of the slaves in it. We all try'd our fortunes as the first time, and it succeeded accordingly, for the cane was let go to none but me. I unty'd the knot, and found in it forty crowns of Spanish gold, with a paper written in Arabick, and at the top of the paper was a great cross. I kiss'd the cross, took the crowns, and returning to the terrais, we all made our Moorish reverences; the hand appear'd again, and I having made signs that I would read the paper, the window was shut. We remain'd all overjoy'd and astonish'd at what had happen'd; and were extreme desirous to know the contents of the paper; but none of us understood Arabick, and it was yet more difficult to find out a proper Interpreter. At last I resolv'd to trust a renegade of Murcia, who had shewn me great proofs of his kindness. We gave one another mutual assurances, and on his side he was oblig'd to keep secret all that I should reveal to him; for the renegades, who have thoughts of returning to their own country, use to get certificates from such persons of quality as are slaves in Barbary, in which they make a sort of an affidavit, that such a one, a renegade, is an honest man, and has always been kind to the Christians, and has a mind to make his escape on the first occasion. Some there are who procure these certificates with an honest design, and remain among Christians as long as they live; but others get them on purpose

pose to make use of them when they go a pirating on the Christian shores ; for then if they are shipwreck'd or taken, they shew these certificates, and say, that thereby may be seen the intention with which they came in the Turks company ; to wit, to get an opportunity of returning to Christendom. By this means they escape the first fury of the Christians, and are seemingly reconcil'd to the church without being hurt ; afterwards they take their time, and return to Barbary to be what they were before.

One of these renegades was my friend, and he had certificates from us all, by which we gave him much commendation : But if the Moors had catch'd him with those papers about him, they would have burnt him alive. I knew that not only he understood the Arabick tongue, but also that he could both speak and write it currently. But yet before I resolv'd to trust him entirely, I bid him read me that paper, which I had found by chance ; he open'd it, and was a good while looking upon it, and construing it to himself. I ask'd him if he understood it ; he said, yes, very well ; and that if I would give him pen, ink and paper, he would translate it word for word. We furnish'd him with what he desir'd, and he went to work ; having finish'd his translation, he said, all that I have here put into Spanish is word for word what is in the Arabick ; only observe, that wherever the paper says Lela Marien, it means our lady the Virgin Mary. The contents were thus :

“ **W**HEN I was a child, my father had a slave, who taught me in my tongue the Christian worship, and told me a great many things of Lela Marien : the Christian slave dy'd and I am sure she went not to the fire, but is with Alla, for I have seen her twice since ; and she bid me go to the land of the Christians to see Lela Marien, who had a great kindness for me. I do not know what is the matter ; but tho' I have seen many Christians out of this window, none has appear'd to me so much a gentleman as thyself. I am very handsome and young, and can carry

“ with

of  
“ with  
“ confi  
“ may  
“ band  
“ if th  
“ vide  
“ a c  
“ any  
“ in  
“ the  
“ cau  
“ wo  
“ me  
“ and  
“ if  
“ bid  
“ for  
“ an  
“ I

Y  
mira  
over  
that  
was  
by f  
susp  
he v  
bert  
of L  
whi  
finn  
us  
for  
ha  
lib  
fo  
for  
he  
ga



“ with me a great deal of Money, and other Riches;  
“ consider whether thou can’st bring it to pass that we  
“ may escape together, and then thou shalt be my Hus-  
“ band in thy own Country, if thou art willing; but  
“ if thou art not, ’tis all one, Lela Marien will pro-  
“ vide me a Husband. I wrote this myself; have  
“ a care to whom thou givest it to read, do not trust  
“ any Moor, because they are all treacherous; and  
“ in this I am much perplex’d, and could wish  
“ there were not a necessity of trusting any one; be-  
“ cause if my Father should come to know it, he  
“ would certainly throw me into a Well, and cover  
“ me over with stones. I will tie a thread to a cane,  
“ and with that thou may’st fasten thy answer; and  
“ if thou can’st not find any one to write in Ara-  
“ bick, make me understand thy meaning by signs,  
“ for Lela Marien will help me to guess it. She  
“ and Alla keep thee, as well as this cross, which  
“ I often kiss, as the Christian slave bad me to do.”

You may imagine, gentlemen, that we were in ad-  
mirer at the contents of this paper, and withal  
overjoy’d at them, which we express’d so openly,  
that the renegade came to understand that the paper  
was not found by chance, but that it was really writ  
by some one among us; and accordingly he told us his  
suspicion, and desired us to trust him entirely, and that  
he would venture his life with us to procure us our li-  
berty. Having said this, he pull’d a brass crucifix out  
of his bosom, and with many tears, swore by the God  
which it represented, and in whom he, though a wicked  
sinner, did firmly believe, to be true and faithful to  
us with all secrecy in what we should impart to him;  
for he guess’d, that by the means of the women who  
had writ that letter, we might all of us recover our lost  
liberty; and he, in particular, might obtain what he had  
so long wish’d for, to be received again into the bo-  
som of his mother the church, from whom, for his sins,  
he had been cut off as a rotten member. The rene-  
gade pronounc’d all this with so many Tears, and such

signs of Repentance, that we were all of opinion to trust him, and tell him the whole truth of the business. We shew'd him the little window out of which the cane us'd to appear, and he from thence took good notice of the house, in order to inform himself who liv'd in it. We next agreed that it would be necessary to answer the Moorish lady's note; so immediately the renegade writ down what I dictated to him; which was exactly as I shall relate, for I have not forgot the least material circumstance of this adventure, nor can forget them as long as I live. The words then were these.

“ **T**HE true Alla keep thee, my dear lady, and  
 “ that blessed virgin, which is the true mother  
 “ of God, and has inspir'd thee with the design of  
 “ going to the land of the Christians. Do thou pray  
 “ her that she would be pleas'd to make thee under-  
 “ stand how thou shalt execute what she has com-  
 “ manded thee; for she is so good that she will do  
 “ it. On my part, and on that of the Christians who  
 “ are with me, I offer to do for thee all we are  
 “ able, even to the hazard of our lives. Fail not to  
 “ write to me, and give me notice of thy resolution,  
 “ for I will always answer thee: the Great Alla hav-  
 “ ing given us a Christian slave, who can read and  
 “ write thy language, as thou may'st perceive by this  
 “ letter; so that thou may'st, without fear, give us  
 “ notice of all thy intentions. As for what thou say'st,  
 “ that as soon as thou shalt arrive in the land of the  
 “ Christians, thou design'st to be my wife, I promise  
 “ thee on the word of a good Christian, to take thee  
 “ for my wife, and thou may'st be assur'd that the Chris-  
 “ tians perform their promises better than the Moors.  
 “ Alla, and his mother Mary be thy guard, my dear  
 “ lady.”

Having writ and clos'd this note, I waited two days till the Bagnio was empty, and then I went upon the terras, the ordinary place of our conversation, to see

if

of  
 if the  
 stirring  
 the th  
 was d  
 I faste  
 let fal  
 of gol  
 infinit  
 at last  
 to us,  
 of tha  
 of, ca  
 only  
 the re  
 maid  
 by sev  
 fus'd  
 a Chri  
 conten  
 with  
 carry  
 tendon  
 Zorai  
 fires t  
 advise  
 way;  
 again,  
 captiv  
 Th  
 all th  
 return  
 much  
 in it a  
 gade l  
 letter

“ I  
 “ rie  
 “ he

if the cane appear'd, and it was not long before it was stirring. As soon as it appear'd I shew'd my note, that the thread might be put to the cane, but I found that was done to my hand; and the cane being let down I fastened the note to it. Not long after the knot was let fall, and I taking it up, found in it several pieces of gold and silver, above fifty crowns, which gave us infinite content, and fortify'd our hopes of obtaining at last our liberty. That evening our renegade came to us, and told us, he had found out that the master of that house was the same Moor we had been told of, call'd Agimorato, extremely rich, and who had one only daughter to inherit all his estate. That it was the report of the whole city, that she was the handsomest maid in all Barbary, having been demanded in marriage by several bassas and viceroys, but that she had always refus'd to marry; he also told us, that he had learnt she had a Christian slave who was dead, all which agreed with the contents of the letter. We immediately held a council with the renegade, about the manner we shou'd use to carry off the Moorish lady, and go all together to Christendom; when at last we agreed to expect the answer of Zoraida, for that is the name of the lady who now desires to be call'd Mary; as well knowing she could best advise the overcoming all the difficulties that were in our way; and after this resolution, the renegade assured us again, that he would lose his life, or deliver us out of captivity.

The Bagnio was four days together full of people, and all that time the cane was invisible; but as soon as it return'd to its solitude, the cane appear'd, with a knot much bigger than ordinary; having untied it, I found in it a letter, and a hundred crowns in gold. The renegade happen'd that day to be with us, and we gave him the letter to read; which he said contain'd these words.

" I Cannot tell, Sir, how to contrive that we may go together for Spain; neither has Lela Marien told it me, tho' I have earnestly asked it of her; all I can do, is to furnish you out of this win-

“dow with a great deal of riches, buy your ransom  
 “and your friends with that, and let one of you go  
 “to Spain, and buy a bark there, and come and fetch  
 “the rest: as for me, you shall find me in my fa-  
 “ther’s garden out of town, by the sea-side, not  
 “far from Babaffio gate; where I am to pass all the  
 “summer with my father and my maids, from which  
 “you may take me without fear, in the night-time,  
 “and carry me to your bark; but remember thou  
 “art to be my husband: and if thou failest in that,  
 “I will desire Lela Marien to chastize thee. If thou  
 “can’st not trust one of thy friends to go for the bark,  
 “pay thy own ransom and go thyself; for I trust thou  
 “wilt return sooner than another, since thou art a  
 “gentleman and a Christian. Find out my father’s  
 “garden, and I will take care to watch when the  
 “Bagnio is empty, and let thee have more money.  
 “Alla keep my dear lord.”

These were the contents of the second letter we re-  
 ceiv’d. Upon the reading of it, every one of us offer’d  
 to be the man that should go and buy the bark, pro-  
 mising to return with all punctuality; but the rene-  
 gade oppos’d that proposition, and said, he would ne-  
 ver consent that any one of us should obtain his li-  
 berty before the rest, because experience had taught  
 him, that people once free, do not perform what they  
 promise when captives; and that some slaves of quality  
 had often us’d that remedy, to send one either to  
 Valencia or Majorca, with money to buy a bark, and  
 come back and fetch the rest; but that they never  
 return’d, because the joy of having obtained their li-  
 berty, and the fear of losing it again, made them for-  
 get what they had promis’d, and cancell’d the me-  
 mory of all obligations. To confirm which, he re-  
 lated to us a strange story, which had happen’d in those  
 parts, as there often does among the slaves. After  
 this, he said that all that could be done, was for him  
 to buy a bark with the money which should redeem  
 one of us; that he could buy one in Algiers, and pre-  
 tend

tend to turn merchant, and deal between Algiers and Tetuan; by which means, he being master of the vessel, might easily find out some way of getting us out of the Bagnio, and taking us on board; and especially if the Moorish lady did what she promis'd, and gave us money to pay all our ransoms; for being free, we might embark even at noon-day: but the greatest difficulty would be, that the Moors do not permit renegades to keep any barks, but large ones fit to cruize upon Christians, for they believe that a renegade, particularly a Spaniard, seldom buys a bark, but with a design of returning to his own country. That however, he knew how to obviate that difficulty, by taking a Tagarin Moor for his partner both in the bark and trade, by which means he should still be master of her, and then all the rest would be easy. We durst not oppose this opinion, tho' we had more inclination every one of us to go to Spain for a bark, as the lady had advis'd; but were afraid that if we contradicted him, as we were at his mercy, he might betray us, and bring our lives in danger; particularly if the business of Zoraida should be discover'd, for whose liberty and life we would have given all ours; so we determin'd to put ourselves under the protection of God and the renegade. At the same time we answer'd Zoraida, telling her, that we would do all she advis'd, which was very well, and just as if Lela Marien herself had instructed her; and that now it depended on her alone to give us the means of bringing this design to pass. I promis'd her once more to be her husband. After this in two days that the Bagnio happen'd to be empty, she gave us, by the means of the cane, two thousand crowns of gold; and withal a letter in which she let us know, that the next Juma, which is their Friday, she was to go to her father's garden, and that before she went she would give us more money; and if we had not enough, she would upon our letting her know it, give us what we should think sufficient; for her father was so rich he would hardly miss it; and so much the less, because he entrusted



her with the keys of all his treasure. We presently gave the renegade five hundred crowns to buy the bark, and I paid my own ransom with eight hundred crowns, which I put into the hands of a merchant at Valencia, then in Algiers, who made the bargain with the king, and had me to his house upon parole, to pay the money upon the arrival of the first bark from Valencia; for if he had paid down the money immediately, the king might have suspected the money had been ready, and lain some time in Algiers, and that the merchant for his own profit had conceal'd it; and in short, I durst not trust my master with ready money, knowing his distrustful and malicious nature. The Thursday preceding that Friday that Zoraida was to go to the garden, she let us have a thousand crowns more; desiring me at the same time, that if I paid my ransom, I would find out her father's garden, and contrive some way of seeing her there. I answer'd in few words, that I would do as she desir'd, and she should only take care to recommend us to Lela Marien, by those prayers which the Christian slave had taught her. Having done this, order was taken to have the ransom of my three friends paid also; lest they seeing me at liberty, and themselves not so, though there was money to set them free, should be troubl'd in mind, and give way to the temptation of the devil, in doing something that might rebound to the prejudice of Zoraida; for though the consideration of their quality ought to have given me security of their honour, yet I did not think it proper to run the least hazard in the matter: so they were redeem'd in the same manner, and by the same merchant that I was, who had the money beforehand; but we never discover'd to him the remainder of our intrigue, as not being willing to risque the danger there was in so doing.

C H A P. XIV.

*The adventures of the Captive continu'd.*

OUR renegade had in a fortnight's time bought a very good bark, capable of carrying above thirty people; and to give no suspicion of any other design, he undertook a voyage to a place upon the coast call'd Sargel, about thirty leagues to the eastward of Algiers towards Oran, where there is a great trade for dry'd figs. He made this voyage two or three times in company with the Tagarin Moor his partner. Those Moors are call'd in Barbary Tagarins, who were driven out of Arragon; as they call those of Granada, Mudajares; and the same in the kingdom of Fez are call'd Elches, and are the best soldiers that prince has.

Every time he pass'd with his bark along the coast, he us'd to cast anchor in a little bay that was not above two bow-shot from the garden where Zoraida expected us; and there he us'd to exercise the Moors that row'd, either in making the Sala, which is a ceremony among them, or in some other employment; by which he practis'd in jest what he was resolv'd to execute in earnest. So sometimes he would go to the garden of Zoraida and beg some fruit, and her father would give him some, though he did not know him. He had a mind to find an occasion to speak to Zoraida, and tell her, as he since own'd to me, that he was the man who by my order was to carry her to the land of the Christians, and that she might depend upon it; but he could never get an opportunity of doing it, because the Moorish and Turkish women never suffer themselves to be seen by any of their own nation, but by their husband, or by his or their father's command; but as for the Christian slaves, they let them see them, and that more familiarly than perhaps could be wish'd. I should have been very sorry that the renegade had seen or spoke to  
Zo-

Zoraida, for it must needs have troubl'd her infinitely to see that her business was trusted to a renegade; and God Almighty, who govern'd our design, order'd it so, that the renegade was disappointed. He in the mean time seeing how securely, and without suspicion, he went and came along the coast, staying where and when he pleas'd by the way, and that his partner the Tagarin Moor was of his mind in all things; that I was at liberty, and that there wanted nothing but some Christians to help us to row; bid me consider whom I intended to carry with me besides those who were ransom'd, and that I should make sure of them for the first Friday, because he had pitch'd on that day for our departure. Upon notice of this resolution, I spoke to twelve lusty Spaniards, good rowers, and those who might easiliest get out of the city: it was a great fortune that we got so many in such a conjuncture, because there were above twenty sail of rovers gone out, who had taken aboard most of the slaves fit for the oar; and we had not had these, but that their master happen'd to stay at home that summer, to finish a Galley he was building to cruize with, and was then upon the stocks. I said no more to them, than only they should steal out of the town in the evening upon the next Friday, and stay for me upon the way that led to Agimorato's garden. I spoke to every one by himself, and gave each of them order to say no more to any other Christian they should see, than that they staid for me there. Having done this, I had another thing of the greatest importance to bring to pass, which was to give Zoraida notice of our design, and how far we had carry'd it, that she might be ready at a short warning, and not to be surpriz'd if we came upon the house on a sudden, and even before she could think that the Christian bark could be come. This made me resolve to go to the garden to try if it were possible to speak to her: so one day, upon pretence of gathering a few herbs, I enter'd the garden, and the first person I met was her father, who spoke to me in the language us'd all over the

Turkish

Turk  
Christ  
stand  
ask'd  
I bel  
Man  
that  
then  
no,  
thes  
gard  
befo  
of f  
near  
and  
disli  
It v  
surp  
dre  
me  
thi  
He  
cov  
of  
th  
pi  
far  
M  
pe  
re  
b  
o  
b  
b  
a  
F  
t  
l  
c

Turkish dominions, which is a mixture of all the Christian and Moorish languages, by which we understand one another from Constantinople to Algiers, and ask'd me what I look'd for in his garden, and who I belong'd to? I told him I was a slave of Arnaute Mami (this man I knew was his intimate friend) and that I wanted a few herbs to make up a sallad. He then ask'd me if I were a man to be redeem'd or no, and how much my master ask'd for me? During these questions, the beautiful Zoraida came out of the garden-house hard by, having discry'd me a good while before; and as the Moorish women make no difficulty of shewing themselves to the Christian slaves, she drew near, without scruple, to the place where her father and I were talking; neither did her father shew any dislike of her coming, but call'd to her to come nearer. It would be hard for me to express here the wonderful surprize and astonishment that the beauty, the rich dress, and the charming air of my belov'd Zoraida put me in: she was all bedeck'd with pearls, which hung thick upon her head and about her neck and arms. Her feet and legs were naked, after the custom of that country, and she had upon her ancles a kind of bracelet of gold, and set with such rich diamonds that her father valu'd them, as she since told me, at ten thousand pistoles a pair; and those about her wrists were of the same value. The pearls were of the best sort, for the Moorish women delight much in them, and have more pearls of all sorts than any nation. Her father was reputed to have the finest in Algiers, and to be worth besides, above two hundred thousand Spanish crowns; of all which, the lady you here see was then mistress; but now is only so of me. What she yet retains of beauty after all her sufferings, may help you to guess at her wonderful appearance in the midst of her prosperity. The beauty of some ladies has its days and times, and is more or less, according to accidents or passions, which naturally raise or diminish the lustre of it, and sometimes quite extinguish it. All I can say, is, at that time she appear'd to me the best-drest and

and most beautiful woman I had ever seen ; to which, adding the obligations I had to her, she pass'd with me for a goddess from heaven, descended upon earth for my relief and happiness. As she drew near, her father told her, in his country language, that I was a slave of his friend Arnaute Mami, and came to pick a sallad in his garden. She presently took the hint, and ask'd me in *Lingua Franca*, whether I was a gentleman, and if I was, why I did not ransom myself ? I told her I was already ransom'd, and that by the price, she might guess the value my master set upon me, since he had bought me for 1500 pieces of eight : to which she reply'd. If thou hadst been my father's slave, I would not have let him part with thee for twice as much ; for, said she, you Christians never speak truth in any thing you say, and make yourselves poor to deceive the Moors. That may be, madam, said I, but in truth I have dealt by my master, and do intend to deal by all those I shall have to deal with, sincerely and honourably. And when dost thou go home ? said she. To-morrow, madam, said I, for here is a French bark that sails to-morrow, and I intend not to lose that opportunity. Is it not better, reply'd Zoraida, to stay till there come some Spanish bark, and go with them, and not with the French, who, I am told, are no friends of yours ? No ; said I, yet if the report of a Spanish bark's coming should prove true, I would perhaps stay for it, though 'tis more likely I shall take the opportunity of the French, because the desire I have of being at home, and with those persons I love, will hardly let me wait for any other conveniency. Without doubt, said Zoraida, thou art married in Spain and impatient to be with thy wife. I am not, said I, marry'd, but I have given my word to a lady, to be so as soon as I can reach my own country. And is the lady handsome that has your promise, said Zoraida ? She is so handsome, said I, that to describe her rightly, and tell truth, I can only say she is like you. At this her father laugh'd heartily, and said, on my word, Christian, she must be very charming if she be like my daughter.

daughter :  
dom :  
truth.  
of wh  
gua F  
explai  
we w  
ning  
leap'd  
ing t  
starte  
do na  
larly  
they  
made  
self  
dogs  
want  
thee  
he l  
she  
had  
by t  
with  
Am  
awa  
yes  
ma  
you  
the  
de  
nee  
wa  
th  
ve  
fr  
w  
fo  
th  
u  
in  
ti



daughter, who is the greatest beauty of all this kingdom : look upon her well, and thou wilt say I speak truth. Zoraida's father was our interpreter for the most of what we talk'd, for though she understood the *Lingua Franca*, yet she was not us'd to speak it, and so explain'd herself more by signs than words. While we were in this conversation, there came a Moor running hastily and cry'd aloud that four Turks had leap'd over the fence of the garden, and were gathering the fruit, though it was not ripe. The old man started at that, and so did Zoraida, for the Moors do naturally stand in great awe of the Turks particularly of the soldiers, who are so insolent on their side, that they treat the Moors as if they were their slaves. This made the father bid his daughter go in and shut herself up close, whilst, said he, I go and talk with these dogs ; and for thee, Christian, gather the herbs thou want'st, and go thy ways in peace, and God conduct thee safe to thy own country. I bow'd to him, and he left me with Zoraida, to go and find out the Turks : she made also as if she were going away, as her father had bid her ; but she was no sooner hid from his sight by the trees of the garden, but she turn'd towards me with her eyes full of tears, and said in her language, *Amexi Christiano, Amexi*, which is, thou art going away, Christian, thou art going : to which I answer'd, yes, madam, I am, but by no means without you ; you may expect me next Friday, and be not surpriz'd when you see us, for we will certainly go to the land of the Christians. I said this so passionately, that she understood me ; and throwing one of her arms about my neck, she began to walk softly and with trembling towards the house. It pleas'd fortune, that as we were in this posture walking together (which might have prov'd very unlucky to us) we met Agimorato coming back from the Turks, and we perceiv'd he had seen us as we were ; but Zoraida, very readily and discreetly, was so far from taking away her arm from about my neck, that drawing still nearer to me, she lean'd her head upon my breast, and letting her knees give way, was in the posture of one that swoons ; I at the same time, made as if I had much ado to bear her up against

my will. Her father came hastily to us, and seeing his daughter in this condition, ask'd her what was the matter? But she not answering readily, he presently said, without doubt these Turks have frighted her, and she faints away; at which he took her in his arms. She, as it were, coming to herself, fetch'd a deep sigh, and with her eyes not yet dry'd from tears, she said Amexi Christiano, Amexi, be gone, Christian, be gone; to which her father-reply'd, 'tis no matter, child, whether he go or no, he has done thee no hurt, and the Turks at my request are gone. 'tis they who frighted her, said I; but since she desires I shou'd be gone, I'll come another time for my sallad, by your leave; for my master says the herbs of your garden are the best of any he can have. Thou may'st have what, and when thou wilt, said the father; for my daughter does not think the Christians troublesome, she only wish'd the Turks away, and by mistake bid thee be gone too, or make haste and gather thy herbs. With this I immediately took leave of 'em both; and Zoraida, shewing great trouble in her looks, went away with her father. I in the mean time, upon pretence of gathering my herbs here and there, walk'd all over the garden, observing exactly all the places of coming in and going out, and every corner fit for my purpose, as well as what strength there was in the house, with all other conveniencies to facilitate our business. Having done this I went my ways, and gave an exact account of all that had happen'd, to the renegade and the rest of my friends, longing earnestly for the time in which I might promise myself my dear Zoraida's company, without any fear of disturbance. At last the happy hour came, and we had all the good success we could promise ourselves, of a design so well laid; for the Friday after my discourse with Zoraida, towards the evening we came to an anchor with our bark, almost over-against the place where my lovely mistress liv'd; the Christians, who were to be employ'd at the oar, were already at the rendezvous, and hid up and down thereabouts. They were all in expectation of my coming, and very desirous to seize the bark which they

saw before their eyes, for they did not know our agreement with the renegade, but thought they were by main force to gain their conveyance and their liberty, by killing the Moors on board. As soon as I and my friends appear'd, all the rest came from their hiding-places to us. By this time the city-gates were shut, and no soul appear'd in all the country near us. When we were all together, it was a question whether we should first fetch Zoraida, or make ourselves masters of those few Moors in the bark. As we were in this consultation, the renegade came to us, and asking what we meant to stand idle, told us his Moors were all gone to rest, and most of them asleep. We told him our difficulty, and he immediately said, that the most important thing was to secure the bark, which might easily be done, and without danger, and then we might go for Zoraida.

We were all of his mind, and so, without more ado, he march'd at the head of us to the bark, and leaping into it, he first drew a scimitar, and cry'd aloud in the Moorish language, let not a man of you stir, except he means it shou'd cost him his life; and while he said this, all the other Christians were got on board. The Moors, who are naturally timorous, hearing the master use this language, were frighted, and without any resistance, suffer'd themselves to be manac'd, which was done with great expedition by the Christians, who told them at the same time, that if they made the least noise, they would immediatly cut their throats. This being done, and half of our number left to guard them, the remainder, with the renegade, went to Agimorato's garden; and our good fortune was such, that coming to force the gate, we found it open with as much facility, as if it had not been shut at all. So we march'd on with great silence to the house, without being perceiv'd by any body. The lovely Zoraida, who was at the window, ask'd softly, upon hearing us tread, whether we were Nazarani, that is Christians? I answer'd yes; and desir'd her to come down. As soon as she heard my voice, she staid not a minute; but, without saying a word, came down and open'd

the door, appearing to us all like a goddess, her beauty and the richness of her dress not being to be describ'd. As soon as I saw her, I took her by the hand, which I kiss'd, the renegade did the same, and then my friends; the rest of the company follow'd the same ceremony; so that we all paid her a kind of homage for our liberty. The renegade ask'd her in Morisco, whether her father was in the garden? She said yes, and that he was asleep. Then said he, we must awake him, and take him with us, as also all that's valuable in the house. No, no, said Zoraida, my father must not be touch'd, and in the house there is nothing so rich as what I shall carry with me, which is enough to make you all rich and content. Having said this she stept into the house, bid us be quiet, and she would soon return. I ask'd the renegade what had pass'd between them, and he told me what he had said: to which I reply'd, that by no means any thing was to be done, otherwise than as Zoraida should please. She was already coming back with a small trunk so full of gold, that she could hardly carry it, when, to our great misfortune, while this was doing, her father awak'd, and hearing a noise in the garden, open'd a window and look'd out: having perceiv'd that there were Christians in it, he began to cry out in Arabick, Thieves, Thieves, Christians, Christians. These cries of his put us all into a terrible disorder and fear; but the renegade seeing our danger, and how much it import'd us to accomplish our enterprize before we were perceived, he ran up to the place where Agimorato was, and took with him some of our company; for I durst by no means leave Zoraida, who had swoon'd away in my arms. Those who went up bestir'd themselves so well, that they brought down Agimorato with his hands ty'd behind him, and his mouth stopp'd with a handkerchief, which hinder'd him from so much as speaking a word; and threatening him besides, that if he made the least attempt to speak, it should cost him his life. When his daughter, who was come to herself, saw him, she cover'd her eyes to avoid the sight, and her father

father remain'd the more astonish'd, for he knew not how willingly she had put herself into our hands. Diligence on our side being the chief thing requisite, we us'd it so as we got to our bark, when our men began to be in pain for us, as fearing we had met with some ill accident: we got on board about two hours after it 'twas dark; where the first thing we did was to unty the hands of Zoraida's father, and to unstop his mouth, but still with the same threatnings of the renegade, in case he made any noise. When he saw his daughter there, he began to sigh most passionately, and more when he saw me embrace her with tenderness, and that she, without any resistance or struggling, seem'd to endure it; he, for all this, was silent, for fear the threatnings of the renegade should be put in execution. Zoraida seeing us a board, and that we were ready to handle our oars to be gone, she bid the renegade tell me, she desired I would set her father, and the other Moors, our prisoners, on shore; for else she would throw herself into the sea, rather than see a father, who had us'd her so tenderly, be carried away captive for her sake, before her eyes. The renegade told me what she said, to which I agreed; but the renegade was of another opinion; saying, that if we set them on shore there, they would raise the country, and give the alarm to the city, by which some light frigates might be dispatch'd in quest of us, and getting between us and the sea, it would be impossible for us to make our escape; and that all that could be done, was to set them at liberty in the first Christian land we could reach. This seem'd so reasonable to us all, that Zoraida herself, being inform'd of the Motives we had, not to obey her at present, agreed to it. Immediately, with great silence and content, we began to ply our oars, recommending ourselves to providence with all our hearts, and endeavour'd to make for Majorca, which is the nearest Christian land; but the north wind rising a little, and the sea with it, we could not hold that course, but were forc'd to drive along shore towards Oran, not without great fear of being discover'd from Sargel, upon the coast, about thirty



Leagues from Algiers. We were likewise apprehensive of meeting some of those galliots which came from Tetuan with merchandize. Though, to say truth, we did not so much fear these last; for except it were a cruizing galliot, we all of us wish'd to meet such a one, which we shou'd certainly take, and so get a better vessel to transport us in. Zoraida all this while hid her face between my hands, that she might not see her father; and I could hear her call upon Lela Marien to help us. By that time we had got about thirty miles the day broke, and we found ourselves within a mile of the shore, which appear'd to us a desert solitary place, but yet we row'd hard to get off to sea, for fear of being discover'd by some body. When we were got about two leagues out to sea, we propos'd the men shou'd row by turns, that some might refresh themselves; but the men at the oar said it was not time yet to rest, and that they could eat and row too, if those who did not row would assist them, and give them meat and drink; this we did, and a little while after the wind blowing fresh, we ceas'd rowing and set sail for Oran, not being able to hold any other course. We made above eight miles an hour, being in no fear of any thing but meeting some cruisers. We gave victuals to our Moorish prisoners, and the renegade comforted them, and told them they were not slaves, but that they should be set at liberty upon the first opportunity. The same was said to Zoraida's father; who answer'd, I might expect from your courtesy any thing else perhaps, O Christians; but that you should give me my liberty, I am not simple enough to believe it; for you never would have run the hazard of taking it from me, if you intended to restore it me so easily; especially since you know who I am, and what you may get for my ransom, which if you will but name, I do from this moment offer you all that you can desire for me and for that unfortunate daughter of mine, or for her alone, since she is the better part of me. When he had said this, he burst out into tears so violently, that Zoraida could not forbear looking up at him, and indeed he mov'd compassion in

in us all, but in her particularly ; infomuch, as starting from my arms, she flew to her father's, and putting her head to his, they began again so passionate and tender a scene, that most of us could not forbear accompanying their grief with our tears ; but her father seeing her so richly dress'd, and so many jewels about her, said to her, in his language, what is the meaning of this, daughter ? for last night before this terrible misfortune befel us, thou wert in thy ordinary dress ; and now, without scarce having had the time to put on such things, I see thee adorn'd with all the fineries that I could give thee, if we were at liberty and in full prosperity. This gives me more wonder and trouble than even our sad misfortune ; therefore answer me. The renegade interpreted all that the Moor said, and we saw that Zoraida answer'd not one word ; but on a sudden, spying the little casket in which she was us'd to put her jewels, which he thought had been left in Algiers, he remain'd yet more astonish'd, and ask'd her how that trunk could come into our hands, and what was in it ? to which the renegade, without expecting Zoraida's answer, reply'd, do not trouble thyself to ask thy daughter so many questions, for with one word I can satisfy them all. Know then that she is a Christian, and 'tis she that has filed off our chains, and given us liberty ; she is with us by her own consent, and I hope well pleas'd, as people should be who come from darkness into light, and from death to life. Is this true, daughter ? said the Moor. It is, reply'd Zoraida. How then, said the old man, art thou really a Christian ? and art thou she that has put thy father into the power of his enemies ? to which Zoraida reply'd, I am she that is a Christian, but not she that has brought thee into this condition, for my design never was to injure my father, but only to do myself good. And what good hast thou done thyself ? said the Moor. Ask that of Lela Marien, reply'd Zoraida, for she can tell thee best. The old man had no sooner heard this but he threw himself, with incredible fury, into the sea, where without doubt he had been drown'd, had not his garments, which were long

and wide, kept him some time above water. Zoraida cry'd out to us to help him, - which we all did so readily, that we pull'd him out by his vest, but half drown'd, and without any sense. This so troubled Zoraida, that she threw herself upon her father and began to lament and take on as if he had been really dead. We turn'd his head downwards, and by this means having disgorg'd a great deal of water, he recover'd a little in about two hours time. The wind in the mean while was come about, and forc'd us toward the shore, so that we were oblig'd to ply our oars not to be driven upon the land. It was our good fortune to get into a small bay, which is made by a promontory, call'd the cape of the Caba Rumia; which, in our tongue, is the cape of the wicked Christian woman; and it is a tradition among the Moors, that Caba, the daughter of count Julian, who was the cause of the loss of Spain, lies buried there; and they think it ominous to be forc'd into that bay, for they never go in otherwise than by necessity; but to us it was no unlucky harbour, but a safe retreat, considering how high the sea went by this time. We posted our centries on shore, but kept our oars ready to be ply'd upon occasion, taking in the mean time some refreshment of what the renegade had provided, praying heartily to God and the virgin Mary, to protect us, and help us to bring our design to a happy conclusion. Here, at the desire of Zoraida, we resolv'd to set her father on shore, with all the other Moors, whom we kept fast bound; for she had not courage, nor could her tender heart suffer any longer, to see her father and her countrymen ill us'd before her face; but we did not think to do it before we were just ready to depart, and then they could not much hurt us, the place being a solitary one, and no habitations near it. Our prayers were not in vain; the wind fell and the sea became calm, inviting us thereby to pursue our intended voyage: We unbound our prisoners and set them on shore, one by one, which they were mightily astonish'd at. When we came to put Zoraida's father on shore, who by this time was come to himself, he said, why do you think, Christians, that

that this wicked woman desires I should be set at liberty? do you think it is for any pity she takes of me? no certainly, but it is because she is not able to bear my presence, which hinders the prosecution of her ill desires: I wou'd not have you think neither that she has embrac'd your religion, because she knows the difference between yours and ours, but because she has heard that she may live more loosely in your country than at home: and then turning himself to Zoraida, while I and another held him fast by the arms, that he might commit no extravagance, he said, O infamous and blind young woman, where art thou going in the power of these dogs, our natural enemies? curs'd be the hour in which I begot thee, and the care and affection with which I bred thee. But I, seeing he was not like to make an end of his exclamations soon, made haste to set him on shore, from whence he continu'd to give us his curses and imprecations; begging on his knees of Mahomet to beg of God Almighty to confound and destroy us; and when being under sail, we cou'd no longer hear him, we saw his actions, which were tearing his hair and beard, and rolling himself upon the ground; but he once strain'd his voice so high, that we heard what he said, which was, come back, my dear daughter, for I forgive thee all; let those men have the treasure which is already in their possession, and do thou return to comfort thy disconsolate father, who must else lose his life in these sandy desarts. All this Zoraida heard, and shed abundance of tears, but could answer nothing, but beg that Lela Marien, who had made her a Christian, wou'd comfort him. God knows, said she, I cou'd not avoid doing what I have done; and that these Christians are not oblig'd to me, for I cou'd not be at rest till I had done this, which to thee, dear father, seems so ill a thing. All this she said, when we were got so far out of his hearing, that we cou'd scarce so much as see him. So I comforted Zoraida as well as I cou'd, and we all minded our voyage. The wind was now so right for our purpose, that we made no doubt of being the next morning upon the Spanish shore; but as it seldom happens

happens that any felicity comes so pure as not to be temper'd and allay'd by some mixture of sorrow ; either our ill fortune, or the Moor's curses had such an effect (for a father's curses are to be dreaded, let the father be what he will) that about midnight, when we were under full sail, with our oars laid by, we saw by the light of the moon, hard by us, a round stern'd vessel with all her sails out, coming a head of us, which she did so close to us, that we were forced to strike our sail not to run foul of her ; and the vessel likewise seem'd to endeavour to let us go by ; they had come so near us to ask from whence we came, and whither we were going ? But doing it in French, she renegade forbid us to answer, saying without doubt these are French pirates, to whom every thing is prize. This made us all be silent ; and as we sail'd on, they being under the wind, fir'd two guns at us, both, as it appear'd, with chain-shot, for one brought our mast by the board, and the other went thro' us, without killing any body ; but we, perceiving we were sinking, call'd to them to come and take us, for we were going to be drown'd ; they then struck their own sails, and putting out their boat, there came about a dozen French on board us, all well arm'd, and with their matches lighted. When they were close to us, seeing we were but few, they took us a-board their boat, saying that this had happen'd to us for not answering their questions. The renegade had time to take a little coffer or trunk, full of Zoraida's treasure, and heave it over-board, without being perceiv'd by any body. When we were on board their vessel, after having learnt from us all they cou'd, they began to strip us, as if we had been their mortal enemies : they plunder'd Zoraida of all the jewels and bracelets she had on her hands and feet ; but that did not so much trouble me, as the apprehension I was in for the rich jewel of her chastity, which she valu'd above all the rest. But that sort of people seldom have any desires beyond the getting of riches, which they saw in abundance before their eyes ; and their covetousness was so sharpen'd by it,

that

of

that ev  
sulted w  
to thro  
they int  
under  
ry'd us  
roguery  
himself  
wou'd  
way th  
chel fro  
bethou  
what  
As foc  
shore (  
our mi  
began  
board,  
tity o  
morfe  
forty  
take f  
went  
comp  
the S  
our  
we v  
quite  
and  
of th  
it, th  
and  
land  
at le  
the  
from  
upon  
and  
opin  
the



that even our slaves clothes tempted them. They consulted what to do with us ; and some were of opinion to throw us over-board, wrapt up in a sail, because they intended to put into some of the Spanish ports, under the notion of being of Britany ; and if they carry'd us with them, they might be punish'd, and their roguery come to light : but the captain, who thought himself rich enough with Zoraida's plunder, said he wou'd not touch at any port of Spain, but make his way through the Straits by night, and so return to Rochel from whence he came. This being resolv'd, they bethought themselves of giving us their long-boat, and what provision we might want for our short passage. As soon as it was day, and that we descry'd the Spanish shore (at which sight, so desirable a thing is liberty, all our miseries vanish'd from our thoughts in a moment) they began to prepare things, and about noon they put us on board, giving us two barrells of water, and a small quantity of bisket ; and the captain, touch'd with some remorse for the lovely Zoraida, gave her, at parting, about forty crowns in gold, and would not suffer his men to take from her those cloaths which now she has on. We went aboard, shewing ourselves rather thankful than complaining. They got out to sea, making for the the Straits, and we having the land before us for our north-star, ply'd our oars, so that about sun-set we were near enough to have landed before it was quite dark ; but considering the moon was hid in clouds, and the heavens were growing dark, and we ignorant of the shore, we did not think it safe to venture on it, tho' many among us were so desirous of liberty, and to be out of all danger, that they would have landed, though on a desert rock ; and by that means, at least we might avoid all little barks of the pirates of the Barbary coast, such as those of Tetuan, who come from home when 'tis dark, and by morning are early upon the Spanish coast ; where they often make a prize, and go home to bed the same day. But the other opinion prevail'd, which was to row gently on, and if the sea and shore gave leave, to land quietly where we cou'd.

cou'd. We did accordingly, and about midnight we came under a great hill, which had a sandy shore, convenient enough for our landing. Here we run our boat in as far as we cou'd, and being got on land, we all kiss'd it for joy, and thank'd God with tears for our deliverance. This done, we took out the little provision we had left, and climb'd up the mountain, thinking ourselves more in safety there, for we cou'd hardly persuade ourselves, nor believe that the land we were upon was the Christian shore. We thought the day long a coming, and then we got to the top of the hill, to see if we cou'd discover any habitations; but we could no where descry either house, or person, or path. We resolv'd, however, to go further on, as thinking we could not miss at last of some body to inform us where we were: that which troubl'd me most was, to see my poor Zoraida go on foot among the sharp rocks, and I would sometimes have carry'd her on my shoulders; but she was as much concern'd at the pains I took, as she cou'd be at what she endur'd; so leaning on me she went on with much patience and content. When we were gone about a quarter of a league, we heard the sound of a little pipe, which we took to be a certain sign of some flock near us; and looking well about, we perceiv'd, at last, at the foot of a cork-tree a young shepherd, who was cutting a stick with his knife with great attention and seriousness. We call'd to him, and he having look'd up, ran away as hard as he could. It seems, as we afterwards heard, the first he saw were the renegade and Zoraida, who being in the Moorish dress, he thought all the Moors in Barbary were upon him; and running into the wood, cry'd all the way as loud as he could, Moors, Moors, arm, arm, the Moors are landed. We hearing this out-cry, did not well know what to do: but considering that the shepherd's roaring wou'd raise the country, and the horse-guard of the coast would be upon us, we agreed that the renegade should pull off his Turkish habit, and put on a slave's coat, which one of us lent him, though he

that

of  
that le  
mending  
way th  
horse v  
for in  
into a  
a half  
still, e  
instead  
captive  
if we  
shepher  
that b  
came;  
that ha  
go on,  
us to  
not, w  
of my  
too, I  
are m  
slave l  
from l  
saying  
and ha  
ther a  
alive.  
the pl  
in Alg  
all th  
lous c  
we sh  
tures.  
tians  
horses  
Velez  
Some  
got i  
them  
to ou

that lent it him remain'd in his shirt. Thus recommending ourselves to God, we went on by the same way that the shepherd ran, still expecting when the horse would come upon us; and we were not deceiv'd, for in less than two hours, as we came down the hills into a plain, we discover'd about fifty horse coming upon a half gallop towards us; when we saw that, we stood still, expecting them. As soon as they came up, and, instead of so many Moors, saw so many poor Christian captives, they were astonish'd. One of them ask'd us if we were the occasion of the alarm that a young shepherd had given the country? Yes, said I, and upon that began to tell him who we were, and whence we came; but one of our company knew the horse-man that had ask'd us the question, and without letting me go on, said, God be prais'd, gentlemen, for bringing us to so good a part of the country, for if I mistake not, we are near Velez Malaga; and if the many years of my captivity have not taken my memory from me too, I think, that you, Sir, who ask us these questions, are my uncle Don Pedro Bustamente. The Christian slave had hardly said this, but the gentleman lighting from his horse, came hastily to embrace the young slave, saying, dear nephew, my joy, my life, I know thee, and have often lamented thy loss, and so has thy mother and thy other relations, whom thou wilt yet find alive. God has preserv'd them, that they may have the pleasure of seeing thee. We had heard thou wert in Algiers, and by what I see of thy dress, and that of all this company, you must all have had some miraculous deliverance. It is so, reply'd the young man, and we shall have time enough now to tell all our adventures. The rest of the horsemen hearing we were Christians escap'd from slavery, lighted likewise from their horses, offering them to us to carry us to the city of Velez Malaga, which was about a league and a half off. Some of them went where we had left our boat, and got it into the port, while others took us up behind them; and Zoraida rid behind the gentleman, uncle to our captive. All the people, who had already heard  
some-

something of our adventure, came out to meet us ; they did not wonder to see captives at liberty, nor Moors prisoners ; for in all that coast they are us'd to it ; but they were astonish'd at the beauty of Zoraida, which at that instant seem'd to be in its point of perfection ; for, what with the agitation of travelling, and what with the joy of being safe in Christendom, without the terrible thought of being retaken, she had such a beautiful colour in her countenance, that were it not for fear of being too partial, I durst say, there was not a more beautiful creature in the world, at least that I had seen. We went straight to church, to thank God for his great mercy to us ; and as we came into it, and that Zoraida had look'd upon the pictures, she said there were several faces there that were like Lela Marien's ; we told her they were her pictures, and the renegade explain'd to her as well as he could the story of them, that she might adore them, as if in reality each of them had been the true Lela Marien, who had spoke to her ; and she, who has a good and clear understanding, comprehended immediately all that was said about the pictures and images. After this, we were dispers'd, and lodg'd in different houses of the town ; but the young Christian slave of Velez carry'd me, Zoraida, and the renegade to his father's house, where we were accommodated pretty well, according to their ability, and us'd with as much kindness as their own son. After six days stay at Velez, the renegade having inform'd himself of what was needful for him to know, went away to Granada, there to be re-admitted by the holy inquisition into the bosom of the church. The other Christians, being at liberty, went each whither he thought fit. Zoraida and I remain'd without other help than the forty crowns the pirate gave her, with which I bought the ass she rides on, and since we landed, have been to her a father and a friend, but not a husband : we are now going to see whether my father be alive, or if either of my brothers has had better fortune than I ; tho' since it has pleas'd heaven to give me Zoraida, and make me her companion, I

reckon

of  
reckon  
ence v  
the de  
me su  
serve  
the ex  
the un  
count  
life w  
the a  
body  
dead.  
TH  
which  
best  
ously  
has n

✕

An  
se

H  
the  
ful  
ente  
you  
selv  
and  
cita  
wer  
pan  
in  
so  
real

reckon no better fortune could befall me. The patience with which she bears the Inconvenience of poverty, the desire she shews of being made a Christian, do give me subject of continual admiration, and oblige me to serve and love her all the days of my life. I confess the expectation of being hers is not a little allay'd with the uncertainties of knowing whether I shall find in my country any one to receive us, or a corner to pass my life with her; and perhaps time will have so alter'd the affairs of our family, that I shall not find any body that will know me, if my father and brothers are dead.

This is, gentlemen, the sum of my adventures, which whether or no they are entertaining, you are best judges. I wish I had told them more compendiously; and yet, I assure you, the fear of being tedious has made me cut short many circumstances of my story.



C H A P. XV.

*An account of what happen'd afterwards in the inn, with several other occurrences worth notice.*

HERE the stranger ended his story, and Don Ferdinand, by way of compliment in the behalf of the whole company, said, truly, captain, the wonderful and surprizing turns of your fortune are not only entertaining, but the pleasing and graceful manner of your relation is as extraordinary as the adventures themselves: we are all bound to pay you our acknowledgments; and I believe we could be delighted with a second recital, though 'twere to last till to morrow, provided it were made by you. Cardenio and the rest of the company join'd with him in offering their utmost service in the re-establishment of his fortune, and that with so much sincerity and earnestness, that the captain had reason to be satisfied of their affection. Don Ferdinand



particularly propos'd to engage the marquis his brother to stand Godfather to Zoraida, if he would return with him; and farther, promis'd to provide him with all things necessary to support his figure and quality in town; but the captain making them a very handsome compliment for their obliging favours, excus'd himself from accepting those kind offers at that time. It was now growing towards the dark of the evening, when a coach stopp'd at the inn, and with it some horse-men, who ask'd for a lodging. The hostess answer'd, they were as full as they could pack. Were you ten times fuller, answer'd one of the horsemen, here must be room made for my lord judge, who is in this coach. The hostess hearing this was very much concern'd; said she, the case, sir, is plain, we have not one bed empty in the house; but if his lordship brings a bed with him, as perhaps he may, he shall command my house with all my heart, and I and my husband will quit our own chamber to serve him; do so then, said the man: and by this time a gentleman alighted from the coach, easily distinguishable for a man of dignity and office, by his long gown and great sleeves. He led a young lady by the hand, about sixteen years of age, dress'd in a riding suit; her beauty and charming air attracted the eyes of every body with admiration, and had not the other ladies been present, any one might have thought it difficult to have match'd her outward graces.

Don Quixote seeing them come near the door, sir, said he, you may enter undismay'd, and refresh yourself in this castle, which though little and indifferently provided, must nevertheless allow room and afford accommodation to arms and learning; and more especially to arms and learning, that like yours, bring beauty for their guide and conductor. For certainly at the approach of this lovely damsel, not only castles ought to open and expand their gates, but even rocks divide their solid bodies, and mountains bow their ambitious crests and stoop to entertain her. Come in therefore, sir, enter this paradise, where you shall find a bright constellation,

lation, worthy to shine in conjunction with that heaven of beauty which you bring: here shall you find arms in their height, and beauty in perfection. Don Quixote's speech, mein, and garb, put the judge to a strange nonplus; and he was not a little surpriz'd on the t'other hand at the sudden appearance of the three ladies, who being inform'd of the judge's coming, and the young lady's beauty, were come out to see and entertain her. But Don Ferdinand, Cardenio, and the curate, addressing him in a stile very different from the knight, soon convinc'd him that he had to do with gentlemen, and persons of note, tho' Don Quixote's figure and behaviour put him to a stand, not being able to make any reasonable conjecture of his extravagance. After the usual civilities pass'd on both sides, they found upon examination, that the women must all lie together in Don Quixote's Apartment, and the men remain without to guard them. The judge consented that his daughter shou'd go with the ladies, and so what with his own bed and what with the inn-keeper's, he and the gentlemen made a shift to pass the night.

The captain, upon the first sight of the judge, had a strong presumption that he was one of his brothers, and presently ask'd one of his servants his name and country. The fellow told him, his name was Juan Perez de Viedma, and that, as he was inform'd, he was born in the highlands of Leon. This, with his own observation, confirm'd his opinion, that this was the brother who had made study his choice; whereupon calling aside Don Ferdinand, Cardenio, and the curate, he told them with great joy what he had learn'd, with what the servant further told him, that his master being made a judge of the court of Mexico, was then upon his journey to the Indies; that the young lady was his only daughter, whose mother dying in child-birth, settled her dowry upon her daughter for a portion, and that the father had still liv'd a widower, and was very rich. Upon the whole matter, he ask'd their advice, whether they thought it proper for him to discover himself presently to his brother, or by some means try

how his pulse beat first in relation to his loss, by which he might guess at his reception. Why should you doubt of a kind one, sir, said the curate; because I am poor, sir, said the captain, and would therefore by some device fathom his affections; for should he prove ashamed to own me, I should be more ashamed to discover myself. Then leave the management to me, said the curate; the affable and courteous behaviour of the judge seems to me so very far from pride, that you need not doubt a welcome reception; but however, because you desire it, I'll engage to find a way to sound him. Supper was now upon the table, and all the gentlemen sat down, but the captain, who eat with the ladies in the next room; when the company had half sup'd, my lord-judge, said the curate, I remember about some years ago, I was happy in the acquaintance and friendship of a gentleman of your name, when I was a prisoner in Constantinople; he was a captain of as much worth and courage as any in the Spanish infantry, but as unfortunate as brave. What was his name, pray sir, said the judge? Ruy Perez de Viedma, answer'd the curate, of a town in the mountains of León. I remember he told me a very odd passage between his father, his two brothers, and himself; and truly had it come from any man of less credit and reputation, I should have thought it no more than a story: he said, that his father made an equal dividend of his estate among his three sons, giving them such advice as might have fitted the mouth of Cato; that he made arms his choice, and with such success, that within a few years (by the pure merit of his bravery) he was made captain of a foot-company, and had a fair prospect of being advanc'd to a colonel; but his fortune forsook him, where he had most reason to expect her favour; for, in the memorable battle of Lepanto, where so many Christians recover'd their liberty he unfortunately lost his. I was taken at Goletta, and after different turns of fortune we became companions at Constantinople; thence we were carry'd to Algiers, where one of the strangest adventures in the world beset this gentleman. The curate then briefly

ran

ran through the whole story of the captain and Zoraida (the judge sitting all the time more attentive than he ever did on the bench) to their being taken and striped by the French; and that he had heard nothing of them after that, nor could ever learn whether they came into Spain, or were carried prisoners into France.

The captain stood list'ning in a corner and observ'd the motions of his brother's countenance, while the curate told his story: which, when he had finish'd, the judge breathing out a deep sigh, and the tears standing in his eyes: O fir, said he, if you knew how nearly your relation touches me, you would easily excuse the violent eruption of these tears. The captain you spoke of is my eldest brother, who, being of a stronger constitution of body, and more elevated soul, made the glory and fame of war his choice, which was one of the three proposals made by my father, as your companion told you. I apply'd myself to study, and my younger brother has purchas'd a vast estate in Peru, out of which he has transmitted to my father enough to support his liberal disposition; and to me, wherewithal to continue my studies, and advance myself to the rank and authority which now I maintain. My father is still alive, but dies daily for grief he can learn nothing of his eldest son, and importunes heaven incessantly, that he may once more see him before death close his eyes. 'Tis very strange, considering his discretion in other matters, that neither prosperity nor adversity could draw one line from him, to give his father an account of his fortunes. For had he or we had the least hint of his captivity, he needed not have staid for the miracle of the Moorish lady's cane for his deliverance. Now am I in the greatest uneasiness in the world, lest the French, the better to conceal their robbery, may have kill'd him; the thoughts of this will damp the pleasure of my voyage, which I thought to prosecute so pleasantly. Could I but guess, dear brother, continu'd he, where you might be found, I would hazard life and fortune for your

deliverance! Could our aged father once understand you were alive, though hidden in the deepest and darkest dungeon in Barbary, his estate, mine, and my brother's, all should fly for your ransom! And for the fair and liberal Zoraida, what thanks, what recompence could we provide? O, might I see the happy day of her spiritual birth and baptism, to see her joined to him in faith and marriage, how should we all rejoice! These and such like expressions the judge utter'd with so much passion and vehemency, that he rais'd a concern in every body.

The curate, foreseeing the happy success of his design, resolv'd to prolong the discovery no farther; and to free the company from suspense, he went to the ladies room, and leading out Zoraida, follow'd by the rest, he took the captain by t'other hand, and presenting them to the judge; suppress your grief, my lord, said he, and glut your heart with joy; behold what you so passionately desir'd your dear brother, and his fair deliverer; this gentleman is captain Viedma, and this the beautiful Algerine; the French have only reduc'd them to this low condition, to make room for your generous sentiments and liberality. The captain then approaching to embrace the judge, he held him off with both his hands, to view him well, but once knowing him, he flew into his arms with such affection, and such abundance of tears, that all the spectators sympathiz'd in his passions. The brothers spoke so feelingly, and their mutual affection was so moving, the surprize so wonderful, and their joy so transporting, that it must be left purely to imagination to conceive. Now they tell one another the strange turns and mazes of their fortunes, then renew their caresses to the height of brotherly tenderness. Now the judge embraces Zoraida, then makes her an offer of his whole fortune; next makes his daughter embrace her; then the sweet and innocent converse of the beautiful Christian, and the lovely Moor, so touch'd the whole company, that they all wept for joy. In the mean time Don Quixote was very solidly attentive, and



and wond'ring at these strange occurrences, attributed them purely to something answerable to the chimerical notions which are incident to chivalry. The captain and Zoraida, in concert with the whole company, resolv'd to return with their brother to Sevil, and thence to advise their father of his arrival and liberty, that the old gentleman should make the best shift he could to get so far to see the baptism and marriage of Zoraida, while the judge took his voyage to the Indies, being oblig'd to make no delay, because the Indian fleet was ready at Sevil, to set sail in a month for New-Spain.

Every thing being now settled, to the universal satisfaction of the company, and being very late, they all agreed for bed, except Don Quixote, who would needs guard the castle whilst they slept, lest some tyrant or giant, covetous of the great treasure of beauty which it inclosed, should make some dangerous attempt. He had the thanks of the house, and the judge, being farther inform'd of his humour, was not a little pleas'd. Sancho Panza was very uneasy and waspish for want of sleep, tho' the best provided with a bed, bestowing himself on his pack-saddle; but he paid dearly for it, as we shall hear presently. The ladies being retir'd to their chamber, and every body else withdrawn to rest, and Don Quixote planted centinel at the castle gate, a voice was heard of a sudden singing so sweetly, that it allur'd all their attentions, but chiefly Dorothea's with whom the judge's daughter Donna Clara de Viedma lay. None could imagine, who could make such pretty musick without an instrument; sometimes it sounded as from the yard, sometimes as from the stable. With this Cardenio knock'd softly at their door, ladies, ladies, said he, are you awake? can you sleep when so charmingly serenaded? don't you hear how sweetly one of the footmen sings? yes, sir, said Dorothea, we hear him plainly. Then Dorothea hearkning as attentively as she could, heard this song.



## C H A P. XVI.

*The pleasant story of the young Muleteer with other strange adventures that happen'd in the inn.*

## A S O N G.

## I.

“ **T** Ofs'd in doubts and fears I rove  
 On the stormy seas of love ;  
 “ Far from comfort, far from port,  
 “ Beauty's prize, and fortune's sport :  
 “ Yet my heart disclaims despair,  
 “ While I trace my leading star.

## II.

“ But reserv'dness, like a cloud,  
 “ Does too oft her glories shroud.  
 “ Pierce the gloom, reviving sight ;  
 “ Be auspicious as you're bright.  
 “ As you hide or dart your beams,  
 “ Your adorer sinks or swims.

Dorothea thought it wou'd not be much amiss to give Donna Clara the opportunity of hearing so excellent a voice, wherefore jogging her gently, first on one side, and then on t'other, and the young lady waking, I ask your pardon, my dear, cry'd Dorothea, for thus interrupting your repose ; and I hope you'll easily forgive me, since I only wake you that you may have the pleasure of hearing one of the most charming voices, that possibly you ever heard in your life. Donna Clara, who was hardly awake, did not perfectly understand what Dorothea said, and therefore desired her to repeat what she had spoke to her. Dorothea did so ; which then oblig'd Donna Clara also to listen ; but scarce had she

she heard the early musician sing two verses, ere she was taken with a strange trembling, as if she had been seiz'd with a violent fit of a quartan ague, and then closely embracing Dorothea, ah! dear madam, cry'd she, with a deep sigh, why did you wake me? alas! the greatest happiness I cou'd now have expected, had been to have stopp'd my ears: that unhappy musician! how's this, my dear, cry'd Dorothea, have you not heard, that the young lad who sung now is but a muleteer? oh no, he's no such thing, reply'd Clara, but a young lord, heir to a great estate, and has such a full possession of my heart, that if he does not slight it, it must be his for ever. Dorothea was strangely surpriz'd at the young lady's passionate expressions, that seem'd far to exceed those of persons of her tender years: you speak so mysteriously, madam, reply'd she, that I can't rightly understand you, unless you will please to let me know more plainly, what you wou'd say of hearts and sighs, and this young musician, whose voice has caus'd so great an alteration in you. However, speak no more of 'em now; for I'm resolv'd I'll not lose the pleasure of hearing him sing. Hold, continu'd she, I fancy he's going to entertain us with another song. With all my heart, return'd Clara, and with that she stop't her ears, that she might not hear him; at which again Dorothea cou'd not chuse but admire; but listening to his voice, she heard the following song.

# H O P E.

## I.

- " U Nconquer'd hope, thou bane of fear,
- " And at last deserter of the brave;
- " Thou soothing ease of mortal care,
- " Thou traveller beyond the grave;
- " Thou soul of patience, airy food,
- " Bold warrant of a distant good,
- " Reviving cordial, kind decoy:
- " Tho' fortune frowns, and friends depart,
- " Tho' *Silvia* flies me, flatt'ring joy,
- " Nor thou, nor love, shall leave my doating heart.
- " The

## II.

- " The phœnix hope can wing her flight  
 " Thro' the vast desarts of the skies,  
 " And still defying fortune's spight,  
 " Rivive, and from her ashes rise.  
 " Then soar, and promise, tho' in vain,  
 " What reason's self despairs to gain.  
 " Thou only, O presuming trust,  
 " Can't feed us still, yet never cloy :  
 " And even a virtue when unjust,  
 " Postpone our pain, and antedate our joy.

## III.

- " No slave, to lazy ease resign'd,  
 " E'er triumph'd over noble foes.  
 " The monarch fortune most is kind  
 " To him who bravely dares oppose.  
 " They say, love sets his blessings high ;  
 " But who would prize an easy joy !  
 " Then I'll my scornful fair pursue,  
 " Tho' the coy beauty still denies ;  
 " I grovel now on earth 'tis true,  
 " But rais'd by her, the humble slave may rise.

Here the voice ended, and Donna Clara's sighs began, which caus'd the greatest curiosity imaginable in Dorothea, to know the occasion of so moving a song, and of so sad a complaint ; wherefore she again intreated her to pursue the discourse she had begun before. Then Clara fearing Lucinda wou'd over-hear her, getting as near Dorothea as was possible, laid her mouth so close to Dorothea's ear, that she was out of danger of being understood by any other ; and began in this manner. He who sung is a gentleman's son of Arragon, his father is a great lord, and dwelt just over-against my father's at Madrid ; and tho' we had always canvas windows in

winter

winter and lattices in summer \*, yet, I can't tell by what accident, this young gentleman, who then went to school, had a sight of me, and whether it were at church, or at some other place, I can't justly tell you; but (in short) he fell in love with me, and made me sensible of his passion from his own windows, which were opposite to mine, with so many signs, and such showers of tears, that at once forc'd me both to believe and to love him, without knowing for what reason I did so. Amongst the usual signs that he made me, one was that of joining his hands together, intimating by that his desire to marry me; which, tho' I heartily wish'd it, I could not communicate to any one, being motherless, and having none near me whom I might trust with the managment of such an affair; and was therefore constrain'd to bear it in silence, without permitting him any other favour, more than to let him gaze on me, by lifting up the lattice or oil'd-cloth a little, when my father and his were abroad. At which he wou'd be so transported with joy, that you wou'd certainly have thought he had been distracted. At last my father's business call'd him away; yet not so soon, but that the young gentleman had notice of it some time before his departure; whence he had it I know not, for 'twas impossible for me to acquaint him with it. This so sensibly afflicted him, as far as I understand, that he fell sick; so that I cou'd not get a sight of him all the day of our departure, so much as to look a farewell on him. But after two days travel, just as we came into an inn, in a village a day's journey hence, I saw him at the inn-door, dress'd so exactly like a muleteer, that it had been utterly impossible for me to have known him, had not his perfect image been stamp'd in my soul. Yes, yes, dear madam, I knew him, and was amaz'd and overjoy'd at the sight of him; and he saw me unknown to my father,

---

\* *Glass windows are not us'd in Spain, at least they are not common, and formerly there were none.*

whose



whose sight he carefully avoids, when we cross the ways in our journey, and when we come to any inn : and now, since I know who he is, and what pain and fatigue it must necessarily be to him to travel thus a-foot, I am ready to die myself with the thought of what he suffers on my account ; and wherever he sets his feet, there I set my eyes. I can't imagine what he proposes to himself in this attempt ; nor by what means he could thus make his escape from his father, who loves him beyond expression, both because he has no other son and heir, and because the young gentleman's merits oblige him to it ; which you must needs confess when you see him : and I dare affirm, beside, that all he has sung was his own immediate composition ; for, as I have heard, he is an excellent scholar, and a great poet. And now whenever I see him, or hear him sing, I start and tremble, as at the sight of a ghost, lest my father shou'd know him, and so be inform'd of our mutual affection. I never spoke one word to him in my life ; yet I love him so dearly, that 'tis impossible I should live without him. This, dear madam, is all the account I can give you of this musician, with whose voice you have been so well entertain'd, and which alone might convince you that he is no muleteer, as you were pleas'd to say, but one who is master of a great estate, and of my poor heart, as I have already told you.

Enough, dear madam, reply'd Dorothea, kissing her a thousand times : 'tis very well, compose yourself till day-light ; and then I trust in heaven I shall so manage your affairs, that the end of them shall be as fortunate as the beginning is innocent. Alas ! Madam, return'd Clara, what end can I propose to myself ; since his father is so rich, and of so noble a family, that he will hardly think me worthy to be his son's servant, much less his wife ? And then again, I would not marry without my father's consent for the universe. All I can desire, is, that the young gentleman would return home, and leave his pursuit of me : happily, by a long absence, and the great distance of  
place,

place, the pain, which now so much afflicts me, may be somewhat mitigated ; tho' I fear what I now propose as a remedy, would rather increase my distemper : though I can't imagine whence, or by what means, this passion for him seiz'd me, since we are both so young, being much about the same age, I believe ; and my father says I shan't be sixteen till next Michaelmas. Dorothea could not forbear laughing to hear the young lady talk so innocently. My dear (said Dorothea) let us repose ourselves the little remaining part of the night, and when day appears, we will put a happy period to your sorrows, or my judgment fails me. Then they address'd themselves again to sleep, and there was a deep silence throughout all the inn ; only the inn-keeper's daughter and Maritornes were awake, who knowing Don Quixote's blind side very well, and that he sat arm'd on horse-back, keeping guard without doors, a fancy took 'em, and they agreed to have a little pastime with him, and hear some of his fine out-of-the-way speeches.

You must know then, that there was but one window in all the inn that look'd out into the field, and that was only a hole out of which they us'd to throw their straw : to this same hole then came these two demy-ladies, whence they saw Don Quixote mounted, and leaning on his lance, and often fetching such mournful and deep sighs, that his very soul seem'd to be torn from him at each of them : they observ'd besides, that he said in a soft amorous tone, O my divine Dulcinea del Toboso ! the heaven of all perfections ! the end and quintessence of discretion ! the treasury of sweet aspect and behaviour ! the magazine of virtue ! and, in a word, the idea of all that is profitable, modest or delightful in the universe ! What noble thing employs thy excellency at this present ? May I presume to hope that thy soul is entertain'd with the thoughts of thy captive-knight, who voluntarily exposes himself to so many dangers for thy sake ? O thou triform'd luminary, give me some account of her ! perhaps thou art now gazing with envy on her, as she's walking

either through some stately gallery of her sumptuous palaces, or leaning on her happy window, there meditating how, with safety of her honour and grandeur, she may sweeten and alleviate the torture which my poor afflicted heart suffers for love of her; with what glories she shall crown my pains, what rest she shall give to my cares, what life to my death, and what reward to my services. And thou, more glorious planet, which by this time, I presume, art harnessing thy horses to pay thy earliest visit to my adorable Dulcinea; I entreat thee, as soon as thou dost see her, to salute her with my most profound respects: but take heed, that when thou look'st on her, and addrest thyself to her, that thou dost not kiss her face; for if thou dost, I shall grow more jealous of thee, than ever thou wert of the swift ingrate, who made thee run and sweat so over the plains of Thessaly, or the banks of Peneus, I have forgotten through which of them thou ran'st so raging with love and jealousy. At these words the inn-keeper's daughter began to call to him softly: sir knight, said she, come a little nearer this way, if you please. At these words Don Quixote turn'd his head, and the moon shining then very bright, he perceiv'd somebody call'd him from the hole, which he fancy'd was a large window full of iron-bars, all richly gilt, suitable to the stately castle, for which he mistook the inn; and all on a sudden, he imagin'd that the beautiful damsel, daughter to the lady of the castle, overcome by the charms of his person, return'd to court him, as she did once before. In this thought, that he might not appear uncivil or ungrateful, he turn'd Rozinante and came to the hole; where seeing the two lasses, fair damsels, said he, I cannot but pity you for your misplac'd affection, since it is altogether impossible you should meet with any return from the object of your wishes proportionable to your great merits and beauty; but yet you ought not by any means to condemn this unhappy knight-errant for his coldness, since love has utterly incapacitated him to become a slave to any other but to her, who, at first sight,

fight  
don  
apar  
men  
than  
can  
you  
and  
ener  
be  
the  
M  
repl  
ask  
fair  
mea  
com  
for  
off  
he v  
cry  
he  
ever  
amo  
Mar  
her  
in  
afs's  
on  
reac  
enar  
said  
may  
take  
befo  
sessi  
you  
serv  
the  
vein

sight, made herself absolute mistress of his soul. Pardon me therefore, excellent lady, and retire to your apartment. Let not, I beseech you, any farther arguments of love force me to be less grateful or civil than I would: but if in the passion you have for me, you can bethink yourself of any thing else wherein I may do you any service, love alone excepted, command it freely; and I swear to you by my absent, yet most charming, enemy, to sacrifice it to you immediately, though it be a lock of Medusa's hair, which are all snakes, or the very sun-beams inclos'd in a glass-vial.

My lady needs none of those things, sir knight, reply'd Maritornes. What then would she command? ask'd Don Quixote. Only the honour of one of your fair hands, return'd Maritornes, to satisfy, in some measure, that violent passion which has obliged her to come hither with the great hazard of her honour: for if my lord, her father, should know it, the cutting off one of her beautiful ears were the least thing he would do to her. Oh! that he durst attempt it, cry'd Don Quixote; but I know he dare not; unless he has a mind to die the most unhappy death that ever father suffer'd, for sacrilegiously depriving his amorous daughter of one of her delicate members. Maritornes made no doubt that he would comply with her desire, and having already laid her design, got in a trice to the stable, and brought Sancho Panza's ass's halter to the hole, just as Don Quixote was got on his feet upon Rozinante's saddle, more easily to reach the barricado'd window, where he imagin'd the enamour'd lady staid; and lifting up his hand to her, said, here, madam, take the hand, or rather, as I may say, the executioner of all earthly miscreants; take, I say, that hand, which never woman touch'd before; no, not even she herself who has intire possession of my whole body; nor do I hold it up to you that you may kiss it, but that you may observe the contexture of the sinews, the ligament of the muscles, and the largeness and dilatation of the veins; whence you may conclude how strong that arm

must be, to which such a hand is join'd. We shall see that presently, reply'd Maritornes, and cast the noose she had made in the halter on his wrist; and then descending from the hole, she ty'd the other end of the halter very fast to the lock of the door. Don Quixote being sensible that the bracelet she had bestow'd on him was very rough, cry'd; you seem rather to abuse than compliment my hand; but I beseech you treat it not so unkindly, since that is not the cause why I do not entertain a passion for you; nor is it just or equal you should discharge the whole tempest of your vengeance on so small a part. Consider, those who love truly, can never be so cruel in their revenge. But not a soul regarded what he said; for as soon as Maritornes had fasten'd him, she and her confederate, almost dead with laughing, ran away, and left him so strongly oblig'd, that 'twas impossible he should disengage himself.

He stood then, as I said, on Rozinante's saddle, with all his arm drawn into the hole, and the rope fasten'd to the lock, being under a fearful apprehension, that if Rozinante mov'd but never so little on any side, he should slip and hang by the arm, and therefore durst not use the least motion in the world, tho' he might reasonably have expected from Rozinante's patience and gentle temper, that if he were not urg'd, he wou'd never have mov'd for a whole age together of his own accord. In short, the knight, perceiving himself fast, and that the ladies had forsaken him, immediately concluded that all this was done by way of enchantment, as in the last adventure in the very same castle, when the enchanted Moor (the carrier) did so damnably maul him. Then he began alone to curse his want of discretion and conduct, since having once made his escape out of that castle in so miserable a condition, he should venture into it a second time: for, by the way, 'twas an observation among all knights-errant, that if they were once foil'd in an adventure, 'twas a certain sign it was not reserv'd for them, but for some other to finish; wherefore they







*Don Quixot hanging at y<sup>e</sup> Window.*



they  
he  
he  
that  
care  
shou  
self  
stan  
time  
inch  
star  
wo  
this  
ado  
ma  
Pan  
at  
dre  
hin  
and  
An  
wit  
for  
mi  
ete  
fin  
a n  
th  
bu  
sta  
gio  
  
br  
fir  
th  
ve  
th  
vo  
so  
th

they would never prove it again. Yet, for all this, he ventur'd to draw back his arm, to try if he could free himself; but he was so fast bound, that his attempt prov'd fruitless. 'Tis true 'twas with care and deliberation he drew it, for fear Rozinante should stir: and then fain would he have seated himself in the saddle; but he found he must either stand, or leave his arm for a ransom. A hundred times he wish'd for Amadis's sword, on which no enchantment had power; then he fell a cursing his stars; then reflected on the great loss the world would sustain all the time he should continue under this enchantment; as he really believ'd it; then his adorable Dulcinea came a-fresh into his thoughts; many a time did he call to his trusty squire Sancho Panza, who, bury'd in a profound sleep, lay stretch'd at length on his ass's pannel, never so much as dreaming of the pangs his mother felt when she bore him; then the aid of the necromancers Lirgandeo and Alquife was invok'd by the unhappy knight. And, in fine, the morning surpriz'd him, rack'd with despair and confusion, bellowing like a bull; for he cou'd not hope from day-light any cure, or mitigation of his pain, which he believ'd wou'd be eternal, being absolutely perswaded he was enchanted, since he perceiv'd that Rozinante mov'd no more than a mountain; and therefore he was of opinion, that neither he nor his horse should eat, drink, or sleep, but remain in that state till the malignancy of the stars were o'er-past, or till some more powerful magician should break the charm.

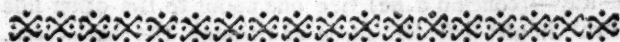
But 'twas an erroneous opinion; for it was scarce day-break, when four horse-men, very well accoutred, their firelocks hanging at the pommels of their saddles, came thither, and finding the inn-gate shut, call'd and knock'd very loud and hard; which Don Quixote perceiving from the post where he stood centinel, cry'd out with a rough voice and a haughty mein, knights or squires, or of whatsoever other degree you are, knock no more at the gates of this castle, since you may assure yourselves, that those who

are within at such an hour as this, are either taking their repose, or not accusom'd to open their fortrefs, 'till Phæbus has display'd himself upon the globe: retire therefore, and wait till it is clear day, and then we will see whether 'tis just or no, that they shou'd open their gates to you. What a devil (cry'd one of them) what castle or fortrefs is this, that we shou'd be oblig'd to so long a ceremony? prythee, friend, if thou art the inn-keeper, bid them open the door to us; for we ride post, and can stay no longer than just to bait our horses. Gentlemen, said Don Quixote, do I look like an inn-keeper then? I can't tell what thou'rt like, reply'd another, but I'm sure thou talk'st like a madman, to call this inn a castle. It is a castle, return'd Don Quixote, ay, and one of the best in the province, and contains one who has held a scepter in her hand, and wore a crown on her head. It might more properly have been said exactly contrary, reply'd the traveller, a scepter in her tail, and a crown in her hand: yet 'tis not unlikely that there may be a company of strolers within, and those do frequently hold such scepters, and wear such crowns as thou pratest of: for certainly no person worthy to sway a scepter, or wear a crown, would condescend to take up a lodging in such a paltry inn as this, where I hear so little noise. Thou hast not been much conversant in the world (said Don Quixote) since thou art so miserably ignorant of accidents so frequently met with in knight-errantry. The companions of him that held this tedious discourse with Don Quixote, were tired with their foolish chattering so long together, and therefore they return'd with greater fury to the gate, where they knock'd so violently, that they wak'd both the inn-keeper and his guests; and so the host rose to ask who was at the door.

In the mean time Rozinante, pensive and sad, with ears hanging down, and motionless, bore up his outstretch'd lord, when one of the horses those four men rode upon, walk'd towards Rozinante, to smell him, and he truly being real flesh and blood, though very like a wooden block, cou'd not chuse but be sensible of it,

it, no  
sonab  
hardl  
feet,  
bling  
groun  
rope  
not  
arm  
grou  
toes  
littl  
grou  
esse  
wh  
the  
gro  
lon

it, nor forbear turning to smell the other, which so seasonably came to comfort and divert him; but he had hardly stir'd an inch from his place, when Don Quixote's feet, that were close together, slipt asunder, and tumbling from the saddle, he had inevitably fallen to the ground, had not his wrist been securely fasten'd to the rope; which put him to so great a torture, that he cou'd not imagine but that his hand was cutting off, or his arm tearing from his body; yet he hung so near the ground, that he cou'd just reach it with the tips of his toes, which added to his torment; for perceiving how little he wanted to the setting his feet wholly on the ground, he strove and tugg'd as much as he cou'd to effect it; not much unlike those that suffer the strapado, who put themselves to greater pain in striving to stretch their limbs, deluded by the hopes of touching the ground, if they could but inch themselves out a little longer.



C H A P. XVII.

*A continuation of the strange adventures in the inn.*

THE miserable outcries of Don Quixote presently drew the inn-keeper to the door, which he hastily opening, was strangely affrighted to hear such a terrible roaring, and the strangers stood no less surpriz'd. Maritornes, whom the cries had also rouz'd, guessing the cause, ran strait to the lost, and slipping the halter, releas'd the Don, who made her a very prostrate acknowledgment, by an unmerciful fall on the ground. The innkeeper and strangers crouded immediately round him to know the cause of his misfortune. He, without regard to their questions, unmanacles his wrist, bounces from the ground, mounts Rozinante, braces his target, couches his lance, and taking a large circumference in the field, came up with a hand-gallop: whoever, said he,



he, dare affirm, assert, or declare that I have been justly enchanted, in case my lady the Princess Micomicona will but give me leave, I will tell him he lies, and will maintain my assertion by immediate combat. The travellers stood amaz'd at Don Quixote's words, till the host remov'd their wonder, by informing them of his usual extravagancies in this kind, and that his behaviour was not to be minded. They then ask'd the inn-keeper if a certain youth, near the age of fifteen, had set up at his house, clad like a muleteer: adding withal some farther marks and tokens, denoting Donna Clara's lover: he told them, that among the number of his guests, such a person might pass him undistinguish'd; but one of them accidentally spying the coach which the judge rid in, call'd to his companions; O gentlemen, gentlemen, here stands the coach which we were told my young master follow'd, and here he must be, that's certain: let's lose no time, one guard the door, the rest enter the house to look for him—hold—stay—(continu'd he) ride one about to the other side o'th' house, lest he 'scape us through the back-yard. Agreed, says another: and they posted themselves accordingly. The inkeeper, though he might guess that they sought the young gentleman whom they had describ'd, was nevertheless puzzl'd as to the cause of their so diligent search. By this time, the day-light and the out-cries of Don Quixote had rais'd the whole house, particularly the two ladies, Clara and Dorothea, who had slept but little, the one with the thoughts her lover was so near her, and the other thro' an earnest desire she had to see him. Don Quixote seeing the travellers neither regard him nor his challenge, was ready to burst with fury and indignation; and could he have dispens'd with the rules of chivalry, which oblige a knight-errant to the finishing one adventure before his embarking in another, he had assaulted them all, and forc'd them to answer them to their cost; but being unfortunately engag'd to re-instate the princess Micomicona, his hands were ty'd up, and he was compell'd to desist, expecting where the search and diligence of the four travellers

travellers would terminate: one of them found the young gentleman fast asleep by a footman, little dreaming of being follow'd or discover'd: The fellow lugging him by the arm, cries out, ay, ay, Don Lewis, these are very fine clothes you have got on, and very becoming a gentleman of your quality, indeed; this scurvy bed too is very suitable to the care and tenderness your mother brought you up with. The youth having rubb'd his drousy eyes, and fixing them stedfastly on the man, knew him presently for one of his father's servants, which struck him speechless with surprize. The fellow went on; there is but one way, sir, pluck up your spirits, and return with us to your father, who is certainly a dead man unless you be recover'd. How came my father to know, answer'd Don Lewis, that I took this way and this disguise? one of your fellow students, reply'd the servant, whom you communicated your design to, mov'd by your father's lamentation of your loss, discover'd it; the good old gentleman dispatch'd away four of his men in search of you; and here we are all at your service, sir, and the joyfullest men alive; for our old master will give us a hearty welcome, having so soon restor'd him what he lov'd so much. That, next to heaven, is as I please, said Don Lewis. What would you, or heaven either, please, sir, but return to your father? come, come, sir, talk no more on't, home you must go, and home you shall go. The footman that lay with Don Lewis, hearing this dispute, rose, and related the business to Don Ferdinand, Cardenio, and the rest that were now dress'd; adding withal, how the man gave him the title of Don, with other circumstances of their conference. They, being already charm'd with the sweetness of his voice, were curious to be inform'd more particularly of his circumstances, and resolving to assist him, in case any violence should be offer'd him, went presently to the place where he was still contending with his father's servant.

By this Dorothea had left her chamber, and with her Donna Clara in great disorder. Dorothea beckoning Cardenio aside, gave him a short account of the musician

an and Donna Clara; and he told her that his father's servants were come for him. Donna Clara over-hearing him, was so exceedingly surpriz'd, that had not Dorothea run and supported her, she had sunk to the ground. Cardenio promising to bring the matter to a fair and successful end, advis'd Dorothea to retire with the indispos'd lady to her chamber. All the four that pursu'd Don Lewis were now come about him, pressing his return without delay, to comfort his poor father; he answer'd 'twas impossible, being engag'd to put a business in execution first, on which depended no less than his honour, and his present and future happiness. They urg'd, that since they had found him, there was no returning for them without him, and if he would not go, he should be carry'd; not unless you kill me, answer'd the young gentleman; upon which all the company were join'd in the dispute, Cardenio, Don Ferdinand and his companions, the judge, the curate, the barber, and Don Quxiote, who thought it needless now to guard the castle any longer. Cardenio who knew the young gentleman's story, ask'd the fellows upon what pretence, or by what authority they could carry the youth away against his will: fir, answer'd one of them, we have reason good for what we do; no less than his father's life depends upon his return. Gentlemen, said Don Lewis, 'tis not proper perhaps to trouble you with a particular relation of my affairs; only thus much, I am a gentleman, and have no dependance that should force me to any thing beside my inclination: nay, but fir, answer'd the servant, reason, I hope, will force you; and though it cannot move you, it must govern us, who must execute our orders, and force you back; we only act as we are order'd, fir. Hold, said the judge, and let us know the whole state of the case. O lord, fir, answer'd one of the servants that knew him, my lord judge, does not your worship know your next neighbour's child? see here, fir, he has run away from his father's house, and has put on these dirty tatter'd rags to the scandal of his family, as your worship may see. The judge then viewing him more attentively

knew

of  
knew  
Lewis  
on, y  
becom  
answe  
judge  
troub  
his m  
factic  
know  
Du  
the i  
ing l  
mily  
men  
ing  
no n  
the  
gent  
men  
cry'  
idle  
com  
to  
wh  
anf  
gra  
vai  
ver  
an  
in  
th  
wi  
th  
g  
tu  
h  
w  
h  
h

knew him, and saluting him, what jest is this, Don Lewis cry'd he ? what mighty intrigue are you carrying on, young sir, to occasion this metamorphosis, so unbecoming your quality ? the young gentleman could not answer a word, and the tears stood in his eyes ; the judge perceiving his disorder, desir'd the four servants to trouble themselves no farther, but leave the youth to his management, engaging his word to act to their satisfaction : and retiring with Don Lewis, he begg'd to know the occasion of his flight.

During their conference, they heard a great noise at the inn-door, occasion'd by two strangers, who, having lodg'd there over night, and seeing the whole family so busied in a curious enquiry into the four horsemen's business, thought to have made off without paying their reckoning ; but the inn-keeper, who minded no man's business more than his own, stopp'd them in the nick, and demanding his money, upbraided their ungenteel design very sharply : they return'd the compliment with kick and cuff so roundly, that the poor host cry'd out for help ; his wife and daughter saw none so idle as Don Quixote, whom the daughter addressing, I conjure you, sir knight, said she, by that virtue deliver'd to you from heaven, to succour my distress'd father, whom two villans are beating to jelly. Beautiful damsel, answer'd Don Quixote with a slow tone and profound gravity, your petition cannot at the present juncture prevail, I being withheld from undertaking any new adventure, by promise first to finish what I am engag'd in ; and all the service you can expect, is only my counsel in this important affair ; go with all speed to your father, with advice to continue and maintain the battle with his utmost resolution, till I obtain permission from the princess Micomicona to reinforce him, which once granted you need make no doubt of his safety. Unfortunate wretch that I am, said Maritornes, who overheard him, before you can have this leave, my master will be sent to the other world. Then, madam, said he, procure me the permission I mention'd, and tho' he were sent into the other world, I'll bring him back  
in

in spite of hell and the devil, or at least so revenge his fall on his enemies, as shall give ample satisfaction to his surviving friends; whereupon breaking off the discourse, he went and threw himself prostrate before Dorrothea, imploring her, in romantick stile, to grant him a commission to march and sustain the governor of that castle, who was just fainting in a dangerous engagement. The princess dispatch'd him very willingly; whereupon presently buckling on his target, and taking up his sword, he ran to the inn-door, where the two guests were still handling their landlord very unmercifully: he there made a sudden stop, tho' Maritornes and the hostess press'd him twice or thrice to tell the cause of his delay in his promis'd assistance to his host. I make a pause, said Don Quixote, because I am commanded by the law of arms to use my sword against none under the order of knighthood; but let my squire be call'd, this affair is altogether his province. In the mean time drubs and bruises were incessant at the inn-gate, and the poor host soundly beaten. His wife, daughter and maid, who stood by, were like to run mad at Don Quixote's hanging back, and the inn-keeper's unequal combat; where we shall leave him, with a design to return to his assistance presently, tho' his fool-hardiness deserves a sound beating, for attempting a thing he was not likely to go thro' with. We now return to hear what Don Lewis answer'd the judge, whom we left retir'd with him, and asking the reason of his travelling on foot, and in so mean a disguise. The young gentleman grasping his hands very passionately, made this reply, not without giving a proof of the greatness of his sorrow by his tears.

Without ceremony or preamble, I must tell you, dear sir, that from the instant that heaven made us neighbours, and I saw Donna Clara, your daughter and my mistress, I resign'd to her the whole command of my affections; and unless you, whom I most truly call my father, prevent it, she shall be my wife this very day; for her sake I abandon'd my father's house; for her have I thus disguis'd my quality; her would I thus have



have follow'd thro' the world: she was the north-star, to guide my wand'ring course, and the mark at which my wishes flew. Her ears indeed are utter strangers to my passion; but yet her eyes may guess, by the tears she saw flowing from mine. You know my fortune and my quality; if these can plead sir, I lay them at her feet; then make me this instant your happy son; and if my father, bias'd by contrary designs should not approve my choice, yet time may produce some favourable turn, and alter his mind. The amorous youth having done speaking, the judge was much surpriz'd at the handsome discovery he made of his affections, but was not a little puzzled how to behave himself in so sudden and unexpected a matter; he therefore, without any positive answer, advis'd him only to compose his thoughts, to divert himself with his servants, and to prevail with them to allow him that day to consider on what was proper to be done. Don Lewis express'd his gratitude by forcibly kissing the judge's hands, and bathing them with his tears, enough to move a heart of Cannibal, much more a judge's, who (being a man o'th' world) had presently the advantage of the match and preferment of his daughter in the wind; tho' he much doubted the consent of Don Lewis's father, who he knew design'd to match his son into the nobility.

By this time Don Quixote's intreaties more than threats had parted the fray at the inn-door; the strangers paying their reckoning went off, and Don Lewis's servants stood expecting the result of the judge's discourse with their young master: when (as the devil would have it) who should come into the inn but the barber whom Don Quixote had robb'd of Mambrino's helmet, and Sancho of the pack-saddle. As he was leading his beast very gravely to the stable, he spies sancho mending something about the pannel; he knew him presently, and setting upon him very roughly, ay, Mr. Thief, Mr. Rogue, said he, have I caught you at last, and all my ass's furniture in your hands too? Sancho finding himself so unexpectedly assaulted, and nettled at the dishonourable terms of his language, laying fast hold

on the pannel with one hand, gave the barber such a douse on the chops with t'other, as set all his teeth a bleeding; for all this the barber stuck by his hold, and cried out so loud, that the whole house was alarm'd at the noise and scuffle; I command you, gentlemen, continu'd he, to assist me in the king's name; for this rogue has robb'd me on the king's high-way, and would now murder me, because I seize upon my goods: that's a lye, cry'd Sancho, 'twas no robbery on the king's high-way, but lawful plunder, won by my lord Don Quixote fairly in the field. The Don himself was now come up very proud of his squire's behaviour on this occasion, accounting him thenceforth a man of spirit, and designing him the honour of knighthood on the first opportunity, thinking his courage might prove a future ornament to the order. Among other things which the barber urged to prove his claim; gentlemen, said he, this pack-saddle is as certainly my pack-saddle, as I hope to die in my bed; I know it as well as if it had been bred and born with me; nay, my very asfs will witness for me; do but try the saddle on him, and if it does not fit him as close as can be, then call me a liar — nay more than that, gentlemen, that very day when they robb'd me of my pack-saddle, they took away a special new bason which was never us'd, and which cost me a crown. Here Don Quixote could no long contain himself; but thrusting between them, he parted them; and having caus'd the pack-saddle to be deposited on the ground to open view, till the matter came to a final decision: that this honourable company may know, cry'd he, in what a manifest error this honest squire persists, take notice how he degrades that with the name of bason, which was, is, and shall be the helmet of Mambrino, which I fairly won from him in the field, and lawfully made myself lord of by force of arms. As to the pack-saddle, 'tis a concern that's beneath my regard; all I have to urge in that affair, is, that my squire begg'd my permission to strip that vanquish'd coward's horse of his trappings to adorn his own; he had my authority for the deed, and he took them; And now for his converting

vert  
othe  
tion  
a co  
duce  
be a  
all  
prov  
a m  
ote,  
be g  
whi  
gent  
imp  
hel  
the  
is t  
with  
fwe  
foug  
he f  
tok  
of f  
his

✱✱

The  
S  
"

P  
gra  
gra  
tha  
lies

verting it from a horse's furniture to a pack-saddle, no other reason can be brought, but that such transformations frequently occur in the affairs of chivalry. For a confirmation of this, dispatch, run Sancho and produce the helmet which this squire would maintain to be a bason. O' my faith, sir, said Sancho, if this be all you can say for yourself, Mambrino's helmet will prove as arrant a bason, as this same man's furniture is a meer pack-saddle. Obey my orders, said Don Quixote, I cannot believe that every thing in this castle will be guided by enchantment. Sancho brought the bason, which Don Quixote holding up in his hands, behold, gentlemen, continu'd he, with what force can this impudent squire affirm this to be a bason, and not the helmet I mention'd? Now I swear before you all, by the order of knighthood, which I profess, that that is is the same individual helmet which I won from him, without the least addition or diminution. That I'll swear, said Sancho; for since my lord won it, he never fought but once in it, and that was the battle wherein he freed those ungracious gally-slaves, who by the same token would have knock'd out his brains with a shower of stones, had not this same honest bason helmet sav'd his skull.



# C H A P. XVIII.

*The controversy about Mambrino's helmet and the pack-saddle, disputed and decided; with other accidents, not more strange than true.*

PRAY good gentlemen (said the barber) let's have your opinion in this matter, I suppose you will grant this same helmet to be a bason. He that dares grant any such thing, said Don Quixote, must know that he lies plainly, if a knight; but if a squire, he lies abominably. Our barber (who was privy to the

whole matter) to humour the jest, and carry the diversion a little higher, took up t'other shaver. Mr. Barber, you must pardon me, sir, if I don't give you your titles, I must let you understand, said he, that I have serv'd an apprenticeship to your trade, and have been a free-man in the company these thirty years, and therefore am not to learn what belongs to shaving. You must likewise know that I have been a soldier too in my younger days, and consequently understand the differences between a helmet, a morion, and a close-helmet, with all other accoutrements belonging to a man of arms. Yet I say, with submission still to better judgment, that this piece, here in dispute before us, is as far from being a bason, as light is from darkness. Withal I affirm, on the other hand, that altho' it be a helmet, 'tis not a compleat one: right (said the Don) for the lower part and the beaver are wanting. A clear case, a clear case, said the curate, Cardenio, Don Ferdinand and his companions, and the judge himself (had not Lewis's concern made him thoughtful) would have humour'd the matter. Lord have mercy upon us now (said the poor barber half distracted) is it possible that so many fine honourable gentlemen should know a bason or a helmet no better than this comes to? Gadzookers, I defy the wisest university in all Spain with their scholarship, to shew me the like. Well —if it must be a helmet, it must be a helmet, that's all. — And by the same rule my pack-saddle must troop too, as this gentleman says. I must confess, said Don Quixote, as to outward appearance it is a pack-saddle; but as I have already said, I will not pretend to determine the dispute as to that point. Nay, said the curate, if Don Quixote speak not, the matter will never come to a decision; because in all affairs of chivalry, we must all give him the preference. I swear, worthy gentlemen, said Don Quixote, that the adventures I have encounter'd in this castle are so strange and supernatural, that I must infallibly conclude them the effects of pure magick and enchantment.

ment. The first time I ever enter'd its gates, I was strangely embarrass'd by an enchanted Moor that inhabited it, and Sancho himself had no better entertainment from his attendants; and last night I hung suspended almost two hours by this arm, without the power of helping myself, or of assigning any reasonable cause of my misfortune. So that for me to meddle or give my opinion in such confus'd and intricate events, would appear presumption; I have already given my final determination as to the helmet in controversy, but dare pronounce no definitive sentence on the pack-saddle, but shall remit it to the discerning judgment of the company; perhaps the power of enchantment may not prevail on you that are not dubb'd knights, so that your understandings may be free, and your judicial faculties more piercing to enter into the true nature of these events, and not conclude upon them from their appearances. Undoubtedly, answer'd Don Ferdinand, the decision of this process depends upon our sentiments, according to Don Quixote's opinion; that the matter therefore may be fairly discuss'd, and that we may proceed upon solid and firm grounds, we'll put it to the vote. Let every one give me his suffrage in my ear, and I will oblige myself to report them faithfully to the board.

To those that knew Don Quixote this proved excellent sport; but to others unacquainted with his humour, as Don Lewis and his four servants, it appeared the most ridiculous stuff in nature; three other travellers too that happen'd to call in by the way, and were found to be officers of the holy brotherhood, or pursuivants, thought the people were all bewitch'd in good earnest. But the barber was quite at his wit's end, to think that his bason, then and there present before his eyes, was become the helmet of Mambrino; and that his pack-saddle was likewise going to be chang'd into rich horse-furniture. Every body laugh'd very heartily to see Don Ferdinand whispering each particular person very gravely to have his vote upon the important contention of the pack-saddle. When he had gone



the rounds among his own faction, that were all privy to the jest, honest fellow, said he very loudly, I grow weary of asking so many impertinent questions; every man has his answer at his tongue's-end, that 'tis meer madness to call this a pack-saddle, and that 'tis positively, *Nemine Contradicente*, right horse-furniture, and great horse-furniture too; besides, friend, your allegations and proofs are of no force, therefore in spite of your ass and you too, we give it for the defendant, that this is, and will continue the furniture of a horse, nay and of a great horse too. Now the devil take me, said the barber\*, if you be not all damnably deceiv'd; and may be I hang'd if my conscience does not plainly tell me 'tis a down-right pack-saddle; but I have lost it according to law, and so fare it well. — But I am neither mad nor drunk sure, for I am fresh and fasting this morning from every thing but sin.

The barber's raving was no less diverting than Don Quixote's clamours; sentence is pass'd, cry'd he; and let every man take possession of his goods and chattels, and heaven give him joy. This is a jest, a meer jest, said one of the four servants; certainly, gentlemen, you can't be in earnest, you're too wise to talk at this rate: for my part, I say and will maintain it, for there's no reason the barber should be wrong'd, that this is a bason, and that the pack-saddle, of a he-ass. May'nt it be a she-ass's pack-saddle, friend, said the curate? That's all one, sir, said the fellow, the question is not whether it be a he or she-ass's pack-saddle, but whether it be a pack-saddle or not, that's the matter, sir. One of the officers of the holy brotherhood, who had heard the whole controversy, very angry to hear such an error maintain'd: gentlemen, said he, this is no more a horse's

---

\* In the original it is el sobrebarbero, i. e. the supernumerary or additional barber, in contradistinction to the other barber who appears first in the history.

horse's saddle than 'tis my father, and he that says the contrary is drunk or mad. You lye like an unmannerly rascal, said the knight, and at the same time with his lance, which he had always ready for such occasions, he offer'd such a blow at the officer's head, that had not the fellow leap'd aside it would have laid him flat. The lance flew into pieces, and the rest of the officers seeing their comrade so abus'd, cry'd out for help, charging every one to aid and assist the holy brotherhood \*. The inn-keeper being one of the fraternity, ran for his sword and rod, and then joined his fellows. Don Lewis's servants got round their master to defend him from harm, and secure him lest he should make his escape in the scuffle. The barber seeing the whole house turn'd topsy-turvy, laid hold again on his pack-saddle: but Sancho, who watch'd his motions, was as ready as he, and secur'd t'other end of it.

Don Quixote drew and assaulted the officers pell-mell. Don Lewis call'd to his servants to join Don Quixote and the gentleman that sided with him; for Cardenio, Don Ferdinand and his friends had engag'd on his side. The curate cry'd out, the landlady shriek'd, her daughter wept, Maritornes howl'd, Dorothea was distracted with fear, Lucinda could not tell what to do, and Donna Clara was strangely frighted; the barber pommell'd Sancho, and Sancho belabour'd the barber. One of Don Lewis's servants went to hold him, but he gave him such a rebuke on his jaws, that his teeth had like to have forsook their station; and then the judge took him into his protection. Don Ferdinand had got one of the officers down, and laid him on back and side. The inn-keeper still cry'd out, help the holy brotherhood; so that the whole house was a medley of wailings, cries, shrieks, confusions, fears, terrors, disasters, slashes, buffets, blows, kicks, cuffs, battery, and bloodshed.

In

---

\* *All these troops of the holy brotherhood carry wands or rods as a mark of their office.*

In the greatest heat of this hurly-burly it came into Don Quixote's head, that he was certainly involv'd in the disorder and confusion of king Agramant's camp; and calling out with a voice that shook the whole house; hold, valorous knights, said he, all hold your furious hands, sheath all your swords, let none presume to strike on pain of death, but hear me speak. The loud and monstrous voice surpriz'd every body into obedience, and the Don proceeded: I told you before, gentlemen, that this castle was enchanted, and that some legion of devils did inhabit it: now let your own eyes confirm my words: don't you behold the strange and horrid confusion of king Agramant's army remov'd hither, and put in execution among us? see, see how they fight for the sword, and yonder for the horse; behold how some contend for the helmet, and here others battle it for the standard; and all fight we don't know how, nor can tell why. Let therefore my lord judge, and his reverence Mr. Curate, represent, one, king Agramant, and the other king Sobrino, and by their wisdom and conduct appease this tumult: for, by the powers divine, 'twere a wrong to honour, and a blot on chivalry, to let so many worthies, as are here met, kill one another for such trifles.

Don Quixote's words were Hebrew to the officers, who having been roughly handled by Cardenio, Ferdinand, and his friends, would not give it over so. But the barber was content; for Sancho had demolish'd his beard and pack-saddle both in the scuffle: the squire dutifully retreated at the first sound of his master's voice; Don Lewis's servants were calm, finding it their best way to be quiet; but the inn-keeper was refractory. He swore that madman ought to be punished for his ill-behaviour, and that every hour he was making some disturbance or another in his house. But at last, the matter was made up, the pack-saddle was agreed to be horse-furniture, the bason a helmet, and the inn a castle, till the day of judgment, if Don Quixote would have it so. Don Lewis's business came next in play. The judge, in concert with

with Don Ferdinand, Cardenio, and the curate, resolv'd that Don Ferdinand should interpose his authority on Don Lewis's behalf, and let his servants know, that he would carry him to Andalusia, where he should be entertain'd according to his quality by his brother the marquis; and they should not oppose this design, seeing Don Lewis was positively resolv'd not to be forc'd to go back to his father yet. Don Ferdinand's Quality, and Don Lewis's resolution prevail'd on the fellows to order matters so, that three of them might return to acquaint their old master, and the fourth wait on Don Lewis. Thus this monstrous heap of confusion and disorder was digested into form, by the authority of Agramant, and wisdom of king Sobrino.

But the enemy of peace, finding his project of setting them all by the ears so eluded, resolv'd once again to have another trial of skill, and play the devil with them all the second bout: for though the officers, understanding the quality of their adversaries, were willing to desist, yet one of them, whom Don Ferdinand had kick'd most unmercifully, remembering that among other warrants, he had one to apprehend Don Quixote for setting free the gally-slaves (which Sancho was sadly afraid would come about) he resolv'd to examine if the marks and tokens given of Don Quixote agreed with this person; then drawing out a parchment, and opening his warrant, he made a shift to read it, at every other word looking cunningly on Don Quixote's face; whereupon having folded up the parchment, and taking his warrant in his left hand, he clapt his right hand fast in the knight's collar, crying you're the king's prisoner: gentlemen, I am an officer, here's my warrant. I charge you all to aid and assist the holy brotherhood. Don Quixote, finding himself us'd so rudely, by one whom he took to be a pitiful scoundrel, kindl'd up into such a rage, that he shook with indignation, and catching the fellow by the neck with both his hands, squeez'd him so violently, that if his companions had not presently freed

freed him, the knight would certainly have throttled him before he had quitted his hold.

The inn-keeper being oblig'd to assist his brother-officer, presently join'd him: the hostess seeing her husband engaging a second time, rais'd a new outcry, her daughter and Maritornes bore the burden of the song, sometimes praying, sometimes crying, sometimes scolding: Sancho, seeing what pass'd, by the lord, said he, my master is in the right; this place is haunted, that's certain; there's no living quietly an hour together. At last Don Ferdinand parted Don Quixote and the officer, who were both pretty well pleas'd to quit their bargain. However, the officers still demanded their prisoner, and to have him deliver'd bound into their hands, commanding all the company a second time to help and assist them in securing that publick robber upon the king's high road.

Don Quixote smil'd at the suppos'd simplicity of the fellows; at last, with solemn gravity, come hither, said he, you offspring of filth and extraction of dunghills, dare you call loosing the fetter'd, freeing the captiv'd, helping the miserable, raising the fall'n, and supplying the indigent, dare you, I say, base-spirited rascals, call these actions robbery? Your thoughts, indeed, are too groveling and servile to understand, or reach the pitch of chivalry; otherwise you had understood, that even the shadow of a knight-errant had claim to your adoration. You a band of officers; you're a pack of rogues indeed, and robbers on the highway by authority. What blockhead of a magistrate durst issue out a warrant to apprehend a knight-errant like me? Could not his ignorance find out that we are exempt from all courts of judicature? That our valour is the bench, our will the common law, and our sword the executioner of justice. Could not his dulness inform him that no rank of nobility or peerage enjoys more immunities and privileges? Has he any precedent that a knight-errant ever paid taxes, subsidy, poll-money, or so much as fare or ferry? What taylor



lor ever had money for his cloaths, or what constable ever made him a reckoning for lodging in his castle? What kings are not proud of his company; and what damsels of his love? And lastly, did you ever read of any knight-errant that ever was, is, or shall be, that could not, with his single force, cudgel four hundred such rogues as you to pieces, if they have the impudence to oppose him?



C H A P. XIX.

*The notable adventure of the officers of the Holy Brotherhood, with Don Quixote's great ferocity and incantment.*

**W**HILST Don Quixote talk'd at this rate, the curate endeavour'd to persuade the officers that he was distracted, as they might easily gather from his words and actions; and therefore, though they should carry him before a magistrate, he would be presently acquitted, as being a mad-man. He that had the warrant made answer, that 'twas not his business to examine whether he were mad or not? he was an officer in commission, and must obey orders; and accordingly was resolv'd to deliver him up to the superior power, which once done, they might acquit him five hundred times if they wou'd. But for all that, the curate persisted they should not carry Don Quixote away with them this time, adding, that the knight himself would by no means be brought to it; and in short, said so much, that they had been greater fools than he, could they not have plainly seen his madness. They therefore not only desisted, but offer'd their service in compounding the difference between Sancho and the barber; their mediation was accepted, they being officers of justice; and succeeded so well, that both parties stood to their arbitration, though not entirely

entirely satisfied with their award, which order'd them to change their pannels, but not their halters nor the girths. The curate made up the business of the bason, paying the barber under-hand, eight reals for it, and getting a general release under his hand of all claims or actions concerning it, and all things else. These two important differences being so happily decided, the only obstacles to a general peace were Don Lewis's servants and the inn-keeper; the first were prevail'd upon to accept the proposals offer'd which were, that three of them should go home, and the fourth attend Don Lewis, where Don Ferdinand should appoint. Thus this difference was made up, to the unspeakable joy of Donna Clara. Zoraida not well understanding any thing that past, was sad and chearful by turns, as she observ'd others to be by their countenances, especially her beloved Spaniard, on whom her eyes were more particularly fix'd. The inn-keeper made a hideous bawling; having discover'd that the barber had receiv'd money for his bason, he knew no reason, he said, why he should not be paid as well as other folks, and swore that Rozinante and Sancho's ass should pay for their master's extravagance before they should leave his stable; the curate pacify'd him, and Don Ferdinand paid him his bill. All things thus accommodated, the inn no longer resembled the confusion of Agramant's camp, but rather the universal peace of Augustus's reign: upon which the curate and Don Ferdinand had the thanks of the house, as a just acknowledgment for their so effectual mediation.

Don Quixote being now free from the difficulties and delays that lately embarrass'd him, held it high time to prosecute his voyage, and bring to some decision the general enterprize which he had the voice and election for. He therefore fully resolv'd to press his departure, and fell on his knees before Dorothea, but she would not hear him in that posture, but prevail'd upon him to rise: he then addressing her in his usual forms; most beautiful lady, said he, 'tis a known proverb, That diligence is the mother of

success;

of  
succes  
war  
ventin  
fore  
most  
in th  
but  
pose  
some  
tentio  
expu  
ende  
may  
by o  
any  
missi  
Here  
with  
repl  
you  
rest  
and  
con  
defe  
tion  
ven  
be  
vin  
fou  
sha  
me  
son  
Th  
he  
hig  
my  
ne  
th  
fin  
th

success; and we have found the greatest successes in war still to depend on expedition and dispatch, by preventing the enemy's design, and forcing a victory before an assault is expected. My inference from this, most high and illustrious lady, is, that our residence in this castle appears nothing conducive to our designs, but may prove dangerous; for we may reasonably suppose that our enemy the giant may learn by spies, or some other secret intelligence, the scheme of our intentions, and consequently fortify himself in some inexpugnable fortress, against the power of our utmost endeavours, and so the strength of my invincible arm may be ineffectual. Let us therefore, dear madam, by our diligence and sudden departure hence, prevent any such his designs, and force our good fortune, by missing no opportunity that we may lay hold of. Here he stopt, waiting the princess's answer. She, with a grave aspect, and style suiting his extravagance, reply'd, the great inclination and indefatigable desire you shew, worthy knight, in assisting the injur'd, and restoring the oppress'd, lay a fair claim to the praises and universal thanks of mankind; but your singular concern, and industrious application in assisting me, deserve my particular acknowledgments and gratification; and I shall make it my peculiar request to heaven, that your generous designs, in my favour, may be soon accomplish'd, that I may be enabled to convince you of the honour and gratitude that may be found in some of our sex. As to our departure, I shall depend upon your pleasure, to whose management I have not only committed the care of my person, but also resign'd the whole power of command. Then by the assistance of the divine power, answer'd he, I will lose no opportunity of re-instating your highness, since you condescend to humble yourself to my orders; let our march be sudden, for the eagerness of my desires, the length of the journey, and the dangers of delay, are great spurs to my dispatch; since therefore heaven has not created, nor hell seen the man I ever fear'd; fly Sancho, saddle Rozinante,

harness your afs, and make ready the lady's palfry ; let us take leave of the governor here, and these other lords, and set out from hence immediately.

Poor Sancho hearing all that pass'd, shook his head. Lord, lord, master, said he, there's always more tricks in a town than are talk'd of (with reverence be it spoken.) Ho ! Villain, cry'd Don Quixote, what tricks can any town or city shew to impair my credit ? Nay, sir, quoth Sancho, if you grow angry, I can hold my tongue, if that be all ; but there are some things which you ought to hear, and I should tell as becomes a trusty squire, and honest servant. Say what thou wilt, said the knight, so it tend not to cowardice ; for if thou art afraid, keep it to thyself, and trouble not me with the mention of fear, which my soul abhors. Pshaw, hang fear, answer'd Sancho, that's not the matter ; but I must tell you, sir, that which is as certain and plain as the nose on your face. This same madam here, that calls herself the queen of the great kingdom of Micomicon, is no more a queen than my grandam. For, do but consider, sir, if she were such a fine queen as you believe, can you imagine she wou'd always be sucking of snouts \*, and kissing and slabbering a certain person, that shall be nameless in this company ? Dorothea blush'd at Sancho's words, for Don Ferdinand had, indeed, sometimes, and in private, taken the freedom with his lips to reap some part of the reward his affection deserv'd ; which Sancho spying by chance made some constructions upon it, very much to the disadvantage of her royalty ; for, in short he concluded her no better than a woman of pleasure. She nevertheless wou'd take no notice of his aspersions, but let him go on ; I say this, sir, continu'd he, because after our trudging thro' all weathers,

---

\* *Hocicando in the original, from Hocico the snout of any beast. Hocico quasi Focico, from the Latin Fauces, jaws. The Spanish form most Latin words by changing F, into H ; thus Fenum hay is Heno, &c.*

weathers, fair after foul, day after night, and night after day, this same person in the inn here, is like to divert himself at our expence, and to gather the fruit of our labours. I think therefore, master, there is no reason, d'ye see, for saddling Rozinante, harnessing my ass, or making ready the lady's palfry; for we had better stay where we are; and let every whore brew as she bakes, and every man that is hungry go to dinner.

Heavens! Into what a fury did these disrespectful words of Sancho put the knight? His whole body shook, his tongue falter'd, his eyes glow'd. Thou villanous, ignorant, rash, unmannerly, blasphemous detractor, said he, how dar'st thou entertain such base and dishonourable thoughts, much more utter thy rude and contemptible suspicions before me and this honourable presence? Away from my sight, thou monster of nature, magazine of lies, cupboard of deceits, granary of guile, publisher of follies, foe of all honour! Away, and never let me see thy face again, on pain of my most furious indignation. Then bending his angry brows, puffing his cheeks, and stamping on the ground, he gave Sancho such a look as almost frighted the poor fellow to annihilation.

In the height of this consternation, all that the poor squire could do, was to turn his back, and sneak out of the room. But Dorothea knowing the knight's temper, undertook to mitigate his anger, sir knight of the woful figure, said she, assuage your wrath, I beseech you; 'tis below your dignity to be offended at these idle words of your squire; and I dare not affirm but that he has some colour of reason for what he said; for it were uncharitable to suspect his sincere understanding, and honest principles, of any false or malicious slander or accusation. We must therefore search deeper into this affair, and believe, that as you have found all transactions in this castle govern'd by enchantment, so some diabolical illusion has appear'd to Sancho, and represented to his enchanted sight what he asserts to my dishonour. Now by the powers supreme, said the knight, your highness has



cut the knot. The misdemeanor of that poor fellow must be attributed purely to enchantment, and the power of some malicious apparition; for the good-nature and simplicity of the poor wretch could never invent a lye, or be guilty of an aspersion to any one's disadvantage. 'Tis evident, said Don Ferdinand, we therefore all intercede in behalf of honest Sancho, that he may be again restor'd to your favour, *sicut erat in principio*, before these illusions had impos'd upon his sense. Don Quixote comply'd, and the curate brought in poor Sancho trembling, who on his knees made an humble acknowledgment of his crime, and begg'd to have his pardon confirm'd by a gracious kiss of his master's hand. Don Quixote gave him his hand and his blessing. Now Sancho, said he, will you hereafter believe what I so often have told you, that the power of enchantment over-rules every thing in this castle? I will, and like your worship, quoth Sancho, all but my tossing in a blanket; for really, sir, that happen'd according to the ordinary course of things. Believe it not, Sancho, reply'd Don Quixote, for were I not convinc'd of the contrary, you should have plentiful revenge; but neither then, nor now, could I ever find any object to wreak my fury or resentment on. Every one desir'd to know what was the business in question; whereupon the inn-keeper gave them an account of Sancho's tossing, which set them all a laughing, and would have made Sancho angry, had not his master afresh assur'd him that 'twas only a meer illusion, which though the squire believ'd not, he held his tongue. The whole company having pass'd two days in the inn, bethought themselves of departing; and the curate and barber found out a device to carry home Don Quixote, without putting Don Ferdinand and Dorothea to the trouble of humouring his impertinence any longer. They first agreed with a waggoner that went by with his team of oxen, to carry him home: then had a kind of a wooden cage made, so large that the knight might conveniently sit, or lie in it. Presently after all the company of the inn disguis'd themselves, some with masks, others by disfiguring their faces,

faces, and the rest by change of apparel, so that Don Quixote shou'd not take them to be the same persons. This done, they all silently enter'd his chamber, where he was sleeping very soundly after his late fatigues: they immediately laid hold on him so forcibly, and held his arms and legs so hard, that he was not able to stir, or do any thing but stare on those odd figures which stood round him. This instantly confirm'd him in the strange fancy that had so long disturb'd his craz'd understanding, and made him believe himself undoubtedly enchanted; and those frightful figures to be the spirits and demons of the enchanted castle. So far the curate's invention succeeded to his expectation. Sancho being the only person there in his right shape and senses, beheld all this very patiently, and tho' he knew them all very well, yet was resolv'd to see the end on't ere he ventur'd to speak his mind. His master likewise said nothing, patiently expecting his fate, and waiting the event of his misfortune. They had by this lifted him out of bed, and placing him in the cage, they shut him in, and nail'd the bars of it so fast, that no small strength could force them open. Then mounting him on their shoulders, as they convey'd him out of the chamber-door, they heard as dreadful a voice as the barber's lungs cou'd bellow, speak these words:

Be not impatient, O knight of the woful figure, at your imprisonment, since 'tis ordain'd by the fates, for the more speedy accomplishment of that most noble adventure, which your incomparable valour has intended. For accomplish'd it shall be, when the rampant Manchegan lion\*, and the white Tobosian dove shall be united, by humbling their lofty and erected chests to the soft yoke of wedlock, from whose wonderful coition shall be produc'd and spring forth brave whelps which

---

\* *It may be translated the rampant spotted lion as well as the rampant Manchegan lion: For the Spanish word Mancha signifies both a spot and the country La Mancha. An untranslatable Double Entendre.*

shall imitate the rampant paws of their valorous sire. And this shall happen before the bright pursuer of the fugitive nymph shall, by his rapid and natural course, take a double circumference in visitation of the luminous signs. And thou, the most noble and faithful squire that ever had sword on thigh, beard on face, or sense of smell in nose, be not dispirited or discontented at this captivity of the flower of all chivalry ; for very speedily, by the eternal will of the world's creator, thou shalt find thyself enobled and exalted beyond the knowledge of thy greatness. And I confirm to thee, from the sage Mentironiana \*, that thou shalt not be defrauded of the promises made by thy noble lord. I therefore conjure thee to follow closely the steps of the courageous and enchanted knight ; for it is necessarily enjoin'd, that you both go where you both shall stay. The fates have commanded me no more, farewell. For I now return, I well know whither.

The barber manag'd the cadence of his voice so artificially towards the latter end of his prophecy, that even those who were made acquainted with the jest, had almost taken it for supernatural.

Don Quixote was much comforted at the prophecy, apprehending presently the sense of it, and applying it to his marriage with Dulcinea del Toboso, from whose happy womb should issue the cubs (signifying his sons) to the eternal glory of La Mancha ; upon the strength of which belief raising his voice, and heaving a profound sigh ; whatsoever thou art, said he, whose happy prognostication I own and acknowledge, I desire thee to implore (in my name) the wise magician, whose charge I am, that his power may protect me in this captivity, and not permit me to perish before the fruition of these grateful and incomparable promises made to me ; for the confirmation of such hopes, I wou'd think my prison a palace, my fetters freedom, and this hard field-bed on

---

\* Mentironiana is a fram'd word from Mentira a lye, as if we shou'd say Fibberiana.

which I lie, more easy than the softest down, or most luxurious lodgings. And as to the consolation offer'd my squire Sancho Panza, I am so convinc'd of his honesty, and he has prov'd his honour in so many adventures, that I mistrust not his deserting me, through any change of fortune. And tho' his or my harder stars shou'd disable me from bestowing on him the island I have promis'd, or some equivalent, his wages at least are secur'd to him by my last will and testament, tho' what he will receive is more answerable, I confess, to my estate and ability, than to his services and great deserts. Sancho Panza made him three or four very respectful bows, and kiss'd both his hands (for one alone he cou'd not, being both ty'd together) and in an instant the demons hoisted up the cage, and yoked it very handsomely to the team of oxen.



CHAP. XX.

*Prosecuting the course of Don Quixote's enchantment, with other memorable occurrences.*

**D**ON Quixote was not so much amaz'd at his enchantment, as the manner of it: among all the volumes of chivalry that I have turn'd over, said he, I never read before of knights-errant drawn in carts, or tugg'd along so leisurely, by such slothful animals as oxen. For they us'd to be hurry'd along with prodigious speed, envelop'd in some dark and dusky cloud; or in some fiery chariot drawn by winged griffins, or some such expeditious creatures; but I must confess, to be drawn thus by a team of oxen, staggers my understanding not a little; tho perhaps the inchanters of our times take a different method from those in former ages. Or rather the wise magicians have invented some course in their proceedings for me, being the first reviver and restorer of arms, which have so long been lost

in

in oblivion, and rusted thro' the disuse of chivalry. What is thy opinion, my dear Sancho? why truly, sir, said Sancho, I can't tell what to think, being not so well read in these matters as your worship; yet for all that, I'm positive and can take my oath on't, that these same phantoms that run up and down here are not orthodox. Orthodox, my friend, said Don Quixote, how can they be orthodox, when they are devils, and have only assumed these phantastical bodies to surprize us into this condition? To convince you, endeavour to touch them, and you will find, their substances are not material, but only subtle air, and outward appearance. Gadzookers, sir, said Sancho, I have touch'd them, and touch'd them again, sir; and I find this same busy devil here, that's fidling about, is as plump and fat as a capon: besides, he has another property, very different from a devil; for the devils, they say, smell of brimstone and other filthy things, and this spark has such a fine scent of essence about him, that you may smell him at least half a league. (Meaning Don Ferdinand, who in all probability, like other gentlemen of his quality, had his clothes perfum'd.)

Alas, honest Sancho, answer'd Don Quixote, the cunning of these fiends is above the reach of thy simplicity; for you must know, the spirits, as spirits, have no scent at all; and if they shou'd, it must necessarily be some unsavoury stench, because they still carry their hell about them, and the least of a perfume or grateful odour were inconsistent with their torments; so that this mistake of yours must be attributed to some farther delusion of your sense. Don Ferdinand and Cardenio, upon these discourses between master and man, were afraid that Sancho would spoil all, and therefore order'd the inn-keeper privately to get ready Rozinante and Sancho's ass, while the curate agreed with the officers for so much a day to conduct them home. Cardenio having hung Don Quixote's target on the pommel of Rozinante's saddle, and the bason on t'other side, he signify'd to Sancho by signs, that he shou'd mount his ass, and lead Rozinante by the bridle; and lastly plac'd



two officers with their fire-locks on each side of the cart.

Being just ready to march, the hostess, her daughter, and Maritornes, came to the door to take their leave of the knight, pretending unsupportable grief for his misfortune. Restrain your tears, most honourable ladies, said Don Quixote, for these mischances are incident to those of my profession; and from these disasters it is we date the greatness of our glory and renown; they are the effects of envy, which still attends virtuous and great actions, and brought upon us by the indirect means of such princes and knights as are emulous of our dignity and fame: but spite of all oppression, spite of all the magick, that ever its first inventor Zoroastres understood, virtue will come off victorious; and triumphing over every danger, will at last shine out in its proper lustre like the sun to enlighten the world. Pardon me, fair ladies, if (thro' ignorance or omission of the respects due to your qualities) I have not behav'd myself to please you; for to the best of my knowledge I never committed a wilful wrong. And I crave the assistance of your prayers, towards my enlargement from this prison, which some malicious magician has confin'd me to; and the first business of my freedom, shall be a grateful acknowledg'ment for the many and obliging favours confer'd upon me in this your castle. Whilst the ladies were thus entertain'd by Don Quixote, the curate and barber were busy taking their leaves of their company; and after mutual compliments and embraces, they engag'd to acquaint one another with their succeeding fortunes. Don Ferdinand intreated the curate to give him a particular relation of Don Quixote's adventures, assuring him, that nothing would be a greater obligation, and at the same time engag'd to inform him of his own marriage and Lucinda's return to her parents; with an account of Zoraida's baptism, and Don Lewis's success in his amour.

The curate having given his word and honour, to satisfy Don Ferdinand, and the last compliments being  
past,

past, was just going, when the inn-keeper made him a proffer of a bundle of papers found in the folds of the same cloak-bag, where he got the curious impertinent, telling him withal, that they were all at his service; because since the owner was not like to come and demand them, and he could not read, they cou'd not better be dispos'd of. The curate thank'd him heartily, and opening the papers, found them entitl'd, *The story of Rinconete, and Cortadillo*. The title shewing it to be a novel, and probably written by the author of *the curious impertinent*, because found in the same wallet, he put it in his pocket, with a resolution to peruse it the very first opportunity: then mounting with his friend the barber and both putting on their masks, they follow'd the procession, which march'd in this order. The carter led the van, and next his cart, flank'd on right and left with two officers with their firelocks; then follow'd Sancho on his ass, leading Rozinante; and lastly the curate and barber on their mighty mules brought up the rear of the body, all with a grave and solemn air, marching no faster than the heavy oxen allow'd. Don Quixote sat leaning against the back of the cage with his hands ty'd and his legs at length; but so silent and motionless, that he seem'd rather a statue than a man.

They had travell'd about two leagues this slow and leisurely pace, when their conductor stopping in a little valley, propos'd it as a fit place to bait in; but he was prevail'd upon to defer halting a little longer, being inform'd by the barber of a certain valley beyond a little hill in their view, better stor'd with grass, and more convenient for their purpose: they had not travell'd much farther when the curate spy'd coming a round pace after them six or seven men very well accoutred: they appear'd, by their brisk riding, to be mounted on churchmens mules, not carry'd as the Don was, by a team of sluggish oxen: they endeavour'd before the heat of the day to reach their inn, which was about a league farther. In short, they soon came up with our slow itinerants; and one of them, that was a canon of Toledo, and  
master

master of those that came along with him, marking the formal procession of the cart, guards, Sancho, Rozinante, the curate, and the barber, but chiefly the incag'd Don Quixote, cou'd not forbear asking what meant their strange method of securing that man; tho' he already believ'd (having observ'd the guards) that he was some notorious criminal in custody of the Holy Brotherhood. One of the fraternity told him, that he cou'd not tell the cause of that knight's imprisonment, but that he might answer for himself, because he best cou'd tell.

Don Quixote over-hearing their discourse, gentlemen, said he, if you are conversant and skill'd in matters of knight-erranty, I will communicate my misfortunes to you; if you are not, I have no reason to give myself the trouble. Truly, friend, answer'd the canon, I am better acquainted with books of chivalry than with Villalpando's divinity; and if that be all your objection, you may safely impart to me what you please. With heaven's permission be it so, said Don Quixote; you must then understand, sir knight, that I am borne away in this cage by the force of enchantments, thro' the envious spight and malice of some cursed magicians; for virtue is more zealously persecuted by ill men, than 'tis belov'd by the good. I am by profession, a knight-errant, and none of those, I assure you, whose deeds never merited a place in the records of fame; but one, who in spight of envy's self, in spight of all the magi of Persia, the brachmans of India, or the gymnosophists of Ethiopia, shall secure to his name a place in the temple of immortality, as a pattern and model to following ages, that ensuing knights-errant, following my steps, may be guided to the top and highest pitch of heroick honour. The noble Don Quixote de la Mancha speaks truth, said the curate, coming up to the company, he is indeed enchanted in this cart, not thro' his own demerits or offences, but the malicious treachery of those whom virtue displeases and valour offends. This is, sir, the knight of the woful figure, of whom you have undoubtedly heard, whose mighty deeds shall stand engrav'd

grav'd in lasting brass and time-surviving marble, till envy grows tir'd with labouring to deface his fame, and malice to conceal 'em.

The canon hearing the prisoner and his guard talk thus in the same stile, was in amaze, and bless'd himself for wonder, as did the rest of the company, till Sancho Panza coming up, to mend the matter, look ye, sirs, said he, I will speak the truth, take it well, or take it ill. My master here, is no more enchanted than my mother: he's in his sober senses, he eats and drinks, and does his needs, like other folks, and as he us'd to do; and yet they'll persuade me that a man, who can do all this, is enchanted forsooth; he can speak too, for if they'll let him alone, he'll prattle you more than thirty attorneys. Then turning towards the curate, O Mr. Curate, Mr. Curate, continu'd he, do you think I don't know you, and that I don't guess what all these new enchantments drive at! Yes I do know you well enough, for all you hide your face; and understand your design, for all your sly tricks, sir. But 'tis an old saying, there's no striving against the stream; and the weakest still goes to the wall. The devil take the luck on't; had not your reverence spoil'd our sport, my master had been marry'd before now to the princess Micomicona, and I had been an earl at least; nay, that I was sure of, had the worst come to the worst; but the old proverb is true again, fortune turns round like a mill-wheel, and he that was yesterday at the top, lies to day at the bottom. I wonder Mr. Curate, you that are a clergyman should not have more conscience; consider, sir, that I have a wife and family who expect all to be great folks, and my master here is to do a world of good deeds: and don't you think, sir, that you won't be made to answer for all this one day? Snuff me those candles, said the barber, hearing Sancho talk at this rate: what, fool, are you brain-sick of your master's disease too? If you be, you're like to bear him company in his cage, I'll assure you, friend. What enchanted island is this that

floats  
thy f  
With  
score  
not  
ven  
an h  
any  
are  
Ever  
and  
an i  
man  
The  
for  
form  
say  
bod  
ma  
kno  
ring  
qui  
ing  
put  
ter  
fin  
the  
low  
Qu  
wi  
wh  
th  
cu  
an  
me  
th  
ju  
av  
gi  
pr

floats in your scull, or what succubus has been riding thy fancy, and got it with child of these hopes? With child! sir, what dy'e mean, sir? said Sancho, I scorn your words, sir; the best lord in the land shou'd not get me with child, no, not the king himself, heaven blefs him. For tho' I'm a poor man, yet I'm an honest man, and an old Christian, and don't owe any man a farthing; and tho' I desire islands, there are other folks, not far off that desire worse things. Every one is the son of his own works; I am a man, and may be pope of Rome, much more governor of an island; especially considering my master may gain so many as he may want persons to bestow 'em on. Therefore pray Mr. Barber, take heed what you say; for all consists not in shaving of beards, and there's some difference between a hawk and a hand-saw. I say so, because we all know one another, and no body shall put a false card upon me. As to my master's enchantment, let it stand as it is, heaven knows best: and a stink is still worse for the stirring. The barber thought silence the best way to quiet Sancho's impertinence; and the curate, doubting that he might spoil all, intreated the canon to put on a little before, and he would unfold the mystery of the encag'd knight, which perhaps he would find one of the pleasantest stories he had ever heard: the canon rid forward with him, and his men follow'd, while the curate made them a relation of Don Quixote's life and quality, his madness and adventures, with the original cause of his distraction, and the whole progress of his affairs, till his being shut up in the cage, to get him home in order to have him cur'd. They all admired at this strange account; and then the canon turning to the curate: believe me, Mr. Curate said he, I am fully convinc'd, that these they call books of knight-errantry are very prejudicial to the publick. And tho' I have been led away with an idle and false pleasure, to read the beginnings of almost as many of 'em as have been printed, I could never yet persuade myself to go



through with any one to the end; for to me they all seem to contain one and the same thing; and there is as much in one of them as in all the rest. The whole composition and stile resemble that of the Milesian fables, which are a sort of idle stories; design'd only for diversion, and not for instruction. It is not so with those fables which are call'd apoloques, that at once delight and instruct. But tho' the main design of such books is to please; yet I cannot conceive how it is possible they should perform it, being fill'd with such a multitude of unaccountable extravagancies. For the pleasure which strikes the soul, must be deriv'd from the beauty and congruity it sees or conceives in those things the sight or imagination lay before it; and nothing in itself deform'd or incongruous can give us any real satisfaction. Now what beauty can there be, or what proportion of the parts to the whole, or of the whole to the several parts, in a book, or fable, where a stripling of sixteen years of age at one cut of a sword cleaves a giant, as tall as a steeple, through the middle, as easily as if he were made of paste-board? Or when they give us the relation of a battle, having said the enemy's power consisted of a million of combatants, yet provided the hero of the book be against them, we must of necessity, tho' never so much against our inclination, conceive that the said knight obtain'd the victory only by his own valour, and the strength of his powerful arm? And what shall we say of the great ease and facility with which an absolute queen or empress casts herself into the arms of an errant and unknown knight? What mortal, not altogether barbarous and unpolish'd, can be pleas'd to read, that a great tower, full of armed knights, cuts thro' the sea like a ship before the wind, and setting out in the evening from the coast of Italy, lands by break of day in Prestor John's country, or in some other, never known to Ptolemy or seen by Marcus Paulus?

lus \*? if it should be answer'd, that the persons who compose these books, write them as confess'd lies; and therefore are not oblig'd to observe niceties, or to have regard to truth; I shall make this reply, that falshood is so much the more commendable, by how much it more resembles truth; and is the more pleasing the more it is doubtful and possible. Fabulous tales ought to be suited to the reader's understanding, being so contrived, that all impossibilities ceasing, all great accidents appearing feasible and the mind wholly hanging in suspense, they may at once surprize, astonish, please and divert; so that pleasure and admiration may go hand in hand. This cannot be performed by him that flies from probability and imitation, which is the perfection of what is written. I have not seen any book of knight-errantry that composes an entire body of a fable with all its parts, so that the middle is answerable to the beginning, and the end to the beginning and middle; but on the contrary, they form them of so many limbs, that they rather seem a chimæra or monster, than a well-proportion'd figure. Besides all this, their stile is uncouth, their exploits incredible, their love immodest, their civility impertinent, their battles tedious, their language absurd, their voyages preposterous; and in short, they are altogether void of solid ingenuity, and therefore fit to be banish'd a Christian commonwealth as useles and prejudicial. The curate was very attentive, and believ'd him a man of a sound judgment, and much in the right in all he had urg'd; and therefore told him, that being of the same opinion, and an enemy to the books of knight-erranty, he had burnt all that belong'd to Don Quixote, which were a considerable number. Then he recounted to him the scrutiny he had made among

---

\* *A Venetian, and a very great traveller. He liv'd in the 13th century, 1272. He had travel'd over Syria, Persia, and the Indies. An account of his travels has been printed, and one of his books is entitled De Regionibus Orientis.*

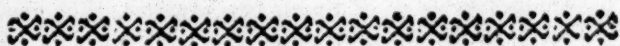
them, what he had condemn'd to the flames, and what spar'd; at which the canon \* laugh'd heartily, and said, that notwithstanding all he had spoken against those books, yet he found one good thing in them, which was the subject they furnish'd a man of understanding with to exercise his parts, because they allow a large scope for the pen to dilate upon without any check, describing shipwrecks, storms, skirmishes and battles; representing to us a brave commander, with all the qualifications requisite in such a one, shewing his prudence in disappointing the designs of the enemy, his eloquence in persuading or dissuading his soldiers, his judgment in council, his celerity in execution, and his valour in assailing or repulsing an assault; laying before us sometimes a dismal and melancholy accident, sometimes a delightful and unexpected adventure; in one place, a beautiful, modest, discreet and reserv'd lady; in another, a Christian-like, brave and courteous gentleman; here a boisterous, inhuman, boasting ruffian; there an affable, warlike and wise prince; livelily expressing the fidelity and loyalty of subjects, generosity and bounty of sovereigns. He may no less, at times, make known his skill in astrology, cosmography, musick and policy; and if he pleases, he cannot want an opportunity of appearing knowing even in necromancy. He may describe the subtilty of Ulysses, the piety of Æneas, the valour of Achilles, the misfortunes of Hector, the treachery of Sinon, the friendship of Euryalus, the liberality of Alexander, the valour of Cæsar, the clemency and sincerity of Trajan, the fidelity of Zopyrus, the prudence of Cato; and in fine, all those actions that may make up a compleat hero, sometimes attributing them all to one person, and at other times dividing them among many. This being so perform'd in a grateful stile, and with ingenious invention, approaching as much as possible to truth, will doubtless compose so beautiful and various a work, that, when finish'd, its excellency and perfection must

---

\* *This canon of Toledo is Cervantes himself all along.*

attain

attain the best end of writing, which is at once to delight and instruct, as I have said before: for the loose method practis'd in these books, gives the author liberty to play the epick, the lyrick, and the dramatick poet, and to run through all the parts of poetry and rhetoric; for epicks may be as well writ in prose \* as in verse.



# C H A P. XXI.

*Containing a continuation of the canon's discourse upon books of knight-errantry, and other curious matters.*

**Y**OU are much in the right, sir, reply'd the curate; and therefore those who have hitherto publish'd books of that kind, are the more to be blam'd, for having had no regard to good sense, art, or rules, by the observation of which they might have made themselves as famous in prose, as the two princes of Greek and Latin poetry are in verse. I must confess, said the canon, I was once tempted to write a book of knight-errantry myself, observing all those rules; and to speak the truth, I writ above one hundred pages, which for the better trial, whether they answer'd my expectation, I communicated to some learned and judicious men fond of those subjects, as well as to some of those ignorant persons, who only are delighted with extravagancies; and they all gave me a satisfactory approbation. And yet I made no farther progress, as well in regard I look upon it to be a thing no way agreeable with my profession, as because I am sensible the illiterate are much more numerous than the learned; and tho' it were of more weight to be commended by the small number of the wise, than scorn'd by the ignorant multitude, yet wou'd I not ex-

---

\* *The adventures of Telemachus is a proof of this.*

pose myself to the confus'd judgment of the giddy vulgar, who principally are those who read such books. But the greatest motive I had to lay aside, and think no more of finishing it, was the argument I form'd to myself deduc'd from the plays now usually acted: for thought I, if plays now in use, as well those which are altogether of the poet's invention, as those that are grounded upon history, by all of them, or, however, the greatest part, made up of most absurd extravagancies and incoherencies; things that have neither head nor foot, side nor bottom; and yet the multitude sees them with satisfaction, esteems and approves them, tho' they are so far from being good; and if the poets who write, and the players who act them, say they must be so contriv'd and no otherwise, because they please the generality of the audience; and if those which are regular and according to art, serve only to please half a score judicious persons who understand them, whilst the rest of the company cannot reach the contrivance, nor know any thing of the matter; and therefore the poets and actors say, they had rather get their bread by the greater number, than the applause of the less: Then may I conclude the same will be the success of this book; so that when I have rack'd my brains to observe the rules, I shall reap no other advantage, than to be laugh'd at for my pains. I have sometimes endeavour'd to convince the actors that they are deceiv'd in their opinion, and that they will draw more company and get more credit by regular plays, than by those preposterous representations now in use; but they are so positive in their humour, that no strength of reason, nor even demonstration, can beat this opinion into their heads. I remember I once was talking to one of those obstinate fellows; do you not remember, said I, that within these few years three tragedies were acted in Spain, written by a famous poet of ours, which were so excellent, that they surpriz'd, delighted, and rais'd the admiration of all that saw them, as well the ignorant and ordinary people as the judicious and men of quality; and the actors got more by those three, than by thirty of the best



best that have been writ since? doubtless, sir, said the actor, you mean the tragedies of Isabella, Phillis, and Alexandra? the very same, I reply'd, and do you judge whether they observ'd the rules of the drama; and whether by doing so, they lost any thing of their esteem, or fail'd of pleasing all sorts of people. So that the fault lies not in the audience's desiring absurdities, but in those who know not how to give 'em any thing else. Nor was there any thing preposterous in several other plays, as for example, Ingratitude reveng'd, Numancia, the Amorous merchant, and the favourable She-enemy; nor in some others, compos'd by judicious poets to their honour and credit, and to the advantage of those that acted them. Much more I added, which did indeed somewhat confound him, but no way satisfy'd or convinc'd him, so as to make him change his erroneous opinion. You have hit upon a subject, sir, said the curate, which has stir'd up in me an old aversion I have for the plays now in use, which is not inferior to that I bear to books of knight-errantry. For whereas plays, according to the opinion of Cicero, ought to be mirrors of human life, patterns of good manners, and the very representatives of truth; those now acted are mirrors of absurdities, patterns of follies, and images of ribaldry. For instance, what can be more absurd, than for the same person to be brought on the stage a child in swadlingbands, in the first scene of the first act; and to appear in the second grown a man? what can be more ridiculous than to represent to us a fighting old fellow, a cowardly youth, a rhetorical footman, a politick page, a churlish king, and an unpolish'd princess? what shall I say of their regard to the time in which those actions they represent, either might or ought to have happen'd, for I have seen a play, in which the first act began in Europe, the second was in Asia, and the third ended in Africa \*? probably, if there had been

---

\* 'Tis to be observ'd that the Spanish plays have only three jornadas or acts.

another act, they would have carry'd it into America ; and thus it would have been acted in the four parts of the world. But if imitation is to be a principal part of the drama, how can any tolerable judgment be pleas'd, when representing an action that happen'd in the time of king Pepin or Charlemaign, they shall attribute it to the emperor Heraclius, and bring him in carrying the cross into Jerusalem, and recovering the holy sepulchre, like Godfrey of Boulogne, there being a vast distance of time betwixt these actions? Thus they will clap together pieces of true history in a play of their own framing, and grounded upon fiction, mixing in it relations of things that have happen'd to different people and in several ages. This they do without any contrivance that might make it appear probable, and with such visible mistakes as are altogether inexcusable ; but the worst of it is, that there are idiots who look upon this as perfection, and think every thing else to be mere pedantry. But if we look into the pious plays, what a multitude of false miracles shall we find in them? how many errors and contradictions, how often the miracles wrought by one saint attributed to another? nay, even in the profane plays, they presume to work miracles upon the bare imagination and conceit that such a supernatural work, or a machine, as they call it, will be ornamental, and draw the common sort to see the play. These things are a reflection upon truth itself, a less'ning and depreciating of history, and a reproach to all Spanish wits ; because strangers, who are very exact in observing the rules of the drama, look upon us as an ignorant and barbarous people, when they see the absurdities and extravagancies of our plays. Nor would it be any excuse to alledge, that the principal design of all good governments, in permitting plays to be publickly acted, is to amuse the commonalty with some lawful recreation and so to divert those ill humours which idleness is apt to breed : and that since this end is attain'd by any sort of plays, whether good or bad, it is needless to prescribe laws to them, or oblige the poets or actors to compose and represent such as are strictly conformable to the rules. To this

this I wou'd answer, that this end wou'd be infinitely better attain'd by good plays, than by bad ones. He who sees a play that is regular and answerable to the rules of poetry, is pleas'd with the comic part, inform'd by the serious, surpriz'd at the variety of accidents, improv'd by the language, warn'd by the frauds, instructed by examples, incens'd against vice, and enamour'd with virtue; for a good play must cause all these emotions in the soul of him that sees it, tho' he were never so insensible and unpolish'd. And it is absolutely impossible, that a play which has these qualifications, shou'd not infinitely divert, satisfy and please beyond another that wants them, as most of them do which are now usually acted. Neither are the poets who write them in fault, for some of them are very sensible of their errors, and extremely capable of performing their duty; but plays being now altogether becoming venal and a sort of merchandize, they say, and with reason, that the actors would not purchase them, unless they were of that stamp; and therefore the poet endeavours to suit the humour of the actors, who is to pay him for his labour. For proof of this let any man observe that infinite number of plays compos'd by an exuberant Spanish wit \*, so full of gaiety and humour, in such elegant verse and choice language, so sententious, and to conclude, in such a majestick stile, that his fame is spread through the universe: yet because he suited himself to the fancy of the actors, many of his pieces have fallen short of their due perfection, tho' some have reach'd it. Others write plays so inconsiderately, that after they have appear'd on the stage, the actors have been forc'd to fly and abscond, for fear of being punish'd, as it has often happen'd, for having affronted kings, and dishonour'd whole families. These, and many other ill consequences, which I omit, would cease, by appointing an intelligent and judicious person at court to ex-

---

\* Lopes de Vega, who writ an incredible number of Spanish plays.

amine all plays before they were acted, that is, not only those which are represented at court, but throughout all Spain: so that, without his licence, no magistrate should suffer any play to appear in publick. Thus players would be careful to send their plays to court, and might then act them with safety, and those who writ would be more circumspect, as standing in awe of an examiner that could judge of their works. By these means we should be furnish'd with good plays, and the end they are design'd for would be attain'd, the people diverted, the Spanish wits esteem'd, the actors safe, and the government spar'd the trouble of punishing them. And if the same person, or another, were intrusted to examine all the new books of knight-errantry, there is no doubt but some might be publish'd with all that perfection you, sir, have mention'd, to the increase of eloquence in our language, to the utter extirpation of the old books, which would be borne down by the new; and for the innocent pastime, not only of idle persons, but even of those who have most employment; for the bow cannot always stand bent, nor can human frailty subsist without some lawful recreation.

The canon and curate were come to this period, when the barber overtaking them, told the latter, that this was the place he had pitch'd on for baiting, during the heat of the day. The canon, induc'd by the pleasantness of the valley, and the satisfaction he found in the curate's conversation, as well as to be farther inform'd of Don Quixote, bore them company, giving order to some of his men to ride to the next inn, and if his sumpter-mule were arriv'd, to send him down provisions to that valley, where the coolness of the shade, and the beauty of the prospect gave him such a fair invitation to dine; and that they should make much of themselves and their mules with what the inn cou'd afford.

In the mean time Sancho having disengag'd himself from the curate and barber, and finding an opportunity to speak to his master alone, he brush'd

up

up to the cage where the knight sate. That I may clear my Conscience, sir, said he, 'tis fitting that I tell you the plain truth of your enchantment here. Who, wou'd you think now, are these two fellows that ride with their faces cover'd? Even the parson of our parish and the barber; none else I'll assure you, sir. And they are in a plot against you, out of meer spite because your deeds will be more famous than theirs: this being suppos'd, it follows, that you are not enchanted, but only cozen'd and abus'd; and if you'll but answer me one question fairly and squarely, you shall find this out to be a palpable cheat, and that there is no enchantment in the case, but merely your senses turn'd topsy turvy.

~~Ask~~ me what questions you please, dear Sancho, said the knight, and I will as willingly resolve them. But for thy assertion, that those who guard us are my old companions the curate and barber, 'tis illusion all. The power of magick indeed, as it has an art to clothe any thing in any shape, may have dress'd these demons in their appearances to insatuate thy sense, and draw thee into such a labyrinth of confusion, that even Theseus's clue could not extricate thee out of it; and this with a design, perhaps, to plunge me deeper into doubts, and make me endanger my understanding, in searching into the strange contrivance of my enchantment, which in every circumstance is so different from all I ever read. Therefore rest satisfy'd that these are no more what thou imaginest, than I am a Turk. But now to thy questions; propose them, and I will endeavour to answer.

Bless me, said Sancho, this is madness upon madness; but since 'tis so, answer me one question. Tell me, as you hope to be deliver'd out of this cage here, and as you hope to find yourself in my lady Dulcinea's arms when you least think on't; as you—conjure me no more, answer'd Don Quixote, but ask freely, for I have promis'd to answer punctually. That's what I want, said Sancho, and you must tell me the truth, and the whole truth, neither more nor less,



less, upon the honour of your knighthood. Pr'ythee, no more of your preliminaries or preambles, cry'd Don Quixote, I tell thee I will answer to a tittle. Then, said Sancho, I ask, with reverence be it spoken, whether your worship, since your being cag'd up, or enchanted, if you will have it so, has not had a motion, more or less, as a man may say? I understand not that phrase, answer'd the knight. Heighday! quoth Sancho, don't you know what I mean? Why there's ne'er a child in our country, that understands the christ-cross-row, but can tell you. I mean, have you a mind to do what another can't do for you? O now I understand thee, Sancho, said the knight; and to answer directly to thy question, positively yes, very often; and therefore pr'ythee help me out of this strait; for, to be free with you, I am not altogether so sweet and clean as I cou'd wish.



## C H A P. XXII.

*A relation of the wise conference between Sancho and his master.*

AH! Sir, said Sancho, have I caught you at last? This is what I wanted to know from my heart and soul. Come sir, you can't deny, that when any body is out of sorts, so as not to eat, or drink, or sleep, or do any natural occasions that you guess, then we say commonly they're bewitch'd or so; from whence may be gather'd, that those who can eat their meat, drink their drink, speak when they're spoken to, and go to the back-side when they have occasion for't, are not bewitch'd or enchanted. Your conclusion is good, answer'd Don Quixote, as to one sort of enchantment, but as I said to thee, there's variety of enchantments, and the changes in them thro' the alterations of times and customs branch  
them

them into so many parts, that there's no arguing from what has been to what may be now. For my part I am verily persuaded of my enchantment, and this suppresses any uneasiness in my conscience, which might arise upon any suggestion to the contrary. To see myself thus idly and dishonourably borne about in a cage, and withheld like a lazy idle coward from the great offices of my function, when at this hour perhaps hundreds of wretches may want my assistance, wou'd be unsupportable, if I were not enchanted. Yet, for all that, your worship shou'd try to get your heels at liberty, said Sancho. Come, Sir, let me alone, I'll set you free I warrant you; and then get you on your trusty Rozinante's back, and a fig for them all. The poor thing here jogs on as drooping and heartless, as if he were enchanted too. Take my advice for once now, and if things don't go as your heart cou'd wish, you have time enough to creep into your cage again, and on the word of a loyal squire I'll go in with you, and be content to be enchanted as long as you please.

I commit the care of my freedom to thy management, said Don Quixote: lay hold on the opportunity, friend Sancho, and thou shalt find me ready to be govern'd in all particulars; tho' I am still afraid thou wilt find thy cunning strangely over-reach'd in thy pretended discovery. The knight and squire had laid their plot, when they reach'd the place that the canon, curate and barber had pitch'd upon to alight in. The cage was taken down, and the oxen unyok'd to graze; when Sancho addressing the curate, pray, said he, will you do so much, as let my lord and master come out a little to slack a point, or else the prison will not be so clean as the presence of so worthy a knight as my master's requires. The curate understanding him, answer'd that he would comply, but that he fear'd Don Quixote, finding himself once at liberty, would give them the slip. I'll be bail for him, said Sancho, body for body, sir; and I, said the canon, upon his bare parole of honour. That you shall have,

said the knight ; besides, you need no security beyond the power of art, for enchanted bodies have no power to dispose of themselves, nor to move from one place to another, without permission of the necromancer, in whose charge they are : the magical charms might rivet 'em for three whole centuries to one place, and fetch 'em back swift as the wind, should the enchanted have fled to some other region. Lastly, as a most convincing argument for his release, he urg'd, that unless they would free him, or get farther off, he should be necessitated to offend their sense of smelling. They guess'd his meaning presently, and gave him his liberty ; and the first use he made of it, was to stretch his benumb'd limbs three or four times ; then marching up to Rozinante, slap'd him twice or thrice on the buttocks : I trust in heaven, thou flower and glory of horse-flesh, said he, that we shall soon be restor'd to our former circumstances ; I, mounted on thy back, and thou between my legs, while I exercise the function for which heaven has bestow'd me on the world. Then walking a little aside with Sancho, he return'd, after a convenient stay, much lighter in-body and mind, and very full of his squire's project.

The canon gaz'd on him, admiring his unparallel'd sort of madness, the rather because in all his words and answers he display'd an excellent judgment ; and, as we have already observ'd, he only rav'd when the discourse fell upon knight-errantry : which moving the canon to compassion, when they had all seated themselves on the grass, expecting the coming up of his sumpter-mule ; is it possible, sir, said he, addressing himself to Don Quixote, that the unhappy reading of books of knight-errantry should have such an influence over you as to destroy your reason, making you believe you are now enchanted, and many other such extravagancies, as remote from truth, as truth itself is from falsehood ? How is it possible that human sense should conceive there ever were in the world such multitudes of famous knights-errant, so many emperors of Trebizond, so many Amadis's, Felixmartes

of

of Hircania, palfreys, rambling damsels, serpents, monsters, giants, unheard of adventures, so many sorts of enchantments, so many battles, terrible encounters, pompous habits and tournaments, amorous princesses, earls, squires and jesting dwarfs, so many love-letters and gallantries, so many Amazonian ladies, and, in short, such an incredible number of extravagant passages, as are contain'd in books of knight-errantry? As for my own particular, I confess, that while I read 'em, and do not reflect that they are nothing but falsehood and folly, they give me some satisfaction; but I no sooner remember what they are, but I cast the best of them from me, and wou'd deliver them up to the flames if I had a fire near me; as well deserving that fate, because, like impostors, they act contrary to the common course of nature. They are like broachers of new sects, and a new manner of living, that seduce the ignorant vulgar to give credit to all their absurdities: nay, they presume to disturb the brains of ingenious and well-bred gentlemen, as appears by the effect they have wrought on your judgment, having reduc'd you to such a condition, that it is necessary to shut you up in a cage, and carry you in a cart drawn by oxen, like some lion or tyger that is carry'd about from town to town to be shewn. Have pity on yourself, good Don Quixote, retrieve your lost judgment, and make use of those abilities heav'n has blest you with, applying your excellent talent to some other study, which may be safer for your conscience, and more for your honour: but, if led away by your natural inclination, you will read books of heroism and great exploits, read in the holy scripture the book of Judges, where you will find wonderful truths and glorious actions not to be question'd. Lusitania had a Viriatus, Rome a Cæsar, Carthage an Hannibal, Greece an Alexander, Castile a Count Fernan Gonzalez \*, Valencia a Cid, Andalusia a Gonzalo Fernandes,

X 2

---

\* Fernan Gonzales, Cid, and the rest here mention'd were Spanish commanders of note, of whom as many fables have been written, as there ever were of knights errant.

handes, Estremadura a Diego Garcia de Peredez, Xerez a Gracia Perez de Vargas, Toledo a Garcilasso, and Sevil a Don Manuel de Leon, the reading of whose brave actions diverts, instructs, pleases, and surprizes the most judicious readers. This will be a study worthy your talent, and by which you will become well read in history, in love with virtue, knowing in goodness, improv'd in manners, brave without rashness, and cautious without cowardice ; all which will redound to the glory of God, your own advancement, and the honour of the province of La Mancha, whence I understand you derive your original. Don Quixote listen'd with great attention to the canon's discourse, and perceiving he had done, after he had fixed his eyes on him for a considerable space ; sir, said he, all your discourse, I find, tends to signify to me, there never were any knights-errant ; that all the books of knight-errantry are false, fabulous, useles, and prejudicial to the publick ; that I have done ill in reading, err'd in believing, and been much to blame in imitating them, by taking upon me the most painful profession of chivalry. And you deny that ever there were any Amadis's of Gaul or Greece, or any of those knights mention'd in those books. Even as you have said, sir, quoth the canon. You also were pleas'd to add, continu'd Don Quixote, that those books had been very hurtful to me, having depriv'd me of my reason and reduc'd me to be carry'd in a cage ; that therefore it would be for my advantage to take up in time, and apply myself to the reading of other books, where I might find more truth, more pleasure, and better instruction. You are in the right, said the canon. Then I am satisfy'd, reply'd Don Quixote, you yourself are the man that raves and is enchanted, since you have thus boldly blasphem'd against a truth so universally receiv'd, that whosoever presumes to contradict it, as you have done, deserves the punishment you would inflict on those books, which in reading offend and tire you. For it were as easy to persuade the world that the sun does not enlighten, the frost cool, and  
the



the earth bear us, as that there never was an Amadis, or any of the other adventurous knights, whose actions are the subjects of so many histories. What mortal can persuade another, that there is no truth in what is recorded of the Infanta Floripes, and Guy of Burgundy: as also Fierabras at the bridge of Mantible in the reign of Charlemagne? which passages, I dare swear, are as true as that now it is day. But if this be false, you may as well say there was no Hector, nor Achilles; nor a Trojan war, nor twelve peers of France, nor a king Arthur of Britain, who is now converted into a crow, and hourly expected in his kingdom. Some also may presume to say, that the history of Guerin Meschino, and that the attempt of St. Grial are both false; that the amours of Sir Tristan and Queen Iseo are apocryphal, as well as those of Queen Guinever and Sir Lancelot of the Lake, whereas there are people living who can almost remember they have seen the old lady Quintanona, who had the best hand at filling a glass of wine of any woman in all Britain. This I am so well assur'd of, that I can remember my grandmother, by my father's side, whenever she saw an old waiting-woman with her reverend veil, us'd to say to me, look yonder, grandson, there's a woman like the old lady Quintanona; whence I infer, she knew her, or at least had seen her picture. Now, who can deny the veracity of the history of Pierres, and the lovely Malagona, when to this day the pin, with which the brave Pierres turn'd his wooden horse that carry'd him through the air, is to be seen in the king's armory? which pin is somewhat bigger then the pole of a coach, by the same token it stands just by Babieca's saddle. At Roncesvalles they keep Orlando's horn, which is as big as a great beam; whence it follows, that there were twelve peers, that there were such men as Pierres, and the famous Cid, besides many other adventurous knights, whose names are in the mouths of all people. You may as well tell me that the brave Portuguese, John de Merlo, was no knight-errant; that he did not go into Burgundy, where, in the city of Ras, he fought

the famous Moses Pierre, Lord of Charney, and in the city of Basil, Moses Henry de Ramestan, coming off in both victorious, and loaded with honour. You may deny the adventures and combats of the two heroick Spaniards, Pedro Barba and Gutierre Quixada (from whose male line I am lineally descended) who in Burgundy overcame the sons of the Earl of St. Paul. You may tell me that Don Ferdinand de Guevara never went into Germany to seek adventures, where he fought Sir George \*, a knight of the Duke of Austria's court. You may say the tilting of Suero de Quinones del Passo, and the exploits of Moses Lewis de Falses, against Don Gonzalo de Guzman a Castilian knight, are meer fables; and so of many other brave actions perform'd by Christian knights, as well Spaniards as foreigners; which are so authentick and true, that I say it over again, he who denies them has neither sense nor reason. The canon was much astonish'd at the medley Don Quixote made of truths and fables, and no less to see how well read he was in all things relating to the achievements of knights-errant; and therefore I cannot deny sir, answer'd he, but that there is some truth in what you have said, especially in what relates to the Spanish knights-errant †; and I will grant there were twelve peers of France, yet I will not believe they perform'd all those actions archbishop Turpin ascribes to them: I rather imagine they were brave gentlemen made choice of by the kings of France, and call'd peers, as being all equal in valour and quality; or if they were not, at least they ought to have been so; and these compos'd a sort of military order, like those of Saint Jago, or Calatrava  
among

---

\* *In the original it is Micer George. Oudin says Micer is a corrupt Spanish way both of spelling and pronouncing Messire, an honourable compellation in French.*

† *The author wou'd impose the belief of these fabulous stories as far as there are Spaniards concern'd in them; but they are ridiculous, and be that allows of Spaniards, must also allow of knights-errant of other nations.*

among us, into which all that are admitted, are suppos'd, or ought to be, gentlemen of birth and known valour. And as now we say a knight of St. John, or of Alcantara; so in those times they said, a knight one of the twelve peers, because there were but twelve of this military order. Nor is it to be doubted but that there were such men as Bernardo del Carpio † and the Cid, yet we have reason to question whether ever they perform'd those great exploits that are ascrib'd to them. As to the pin, Count Pierres's pin which you spoke of, and which you say stands by Babieca's saddle, I own my ignorance, and confess I was so short-sighted, that tho' I saw the saddle, yet I did not perceive the pin, which is somewhat strange, if it be so large as you describe it. 'Tis there without doubt, reply'd Don Quixote, by the same token they say it is kept in a leathern case to keep it from rusting. That may very well be, said the canon, but upon the word of a priest I do not remember I ever saw it: yet grant it were there, that does not enforce the belief of so many Amadis's, nor of such a multitude of knights-errant as the world talks of; nor is there any reason so worthy a person, so judicious, and so well qualify'd as you are, shou'd imagine there is any truth in the wild extravagancies contain'd in all the fabulous nonsensical books of knight-errantry.

---

† *Tis a great question, whether there ever was such a man as Bernard del Carpio.*



## C H A P. XXIII.

*The notable dispute between the canon and Don Quixote ;  
with other matters.*

VERY well, cry'd Don Quixote, then all those books must be fabulous, tho' licens'd by kings, approv'd by the examiners, read with general satisfaction, and applauded by the better sort and the meaner, rich and poor, learned and unlearned, gentry and commonalty ; and, in short, by all sorts of persons of what state and condition soever, and tho' they carry such an appearance of truth, setting down the father, mother, country, kindred, age, place and actions to a tittle, and day by day, of the knight and knights of whom they treat ? for shame, sir, continu'd he, forbear uttering such blasphemies ; and believe me, in this I advise you to behave yourself as becomes a man of sense, or else read them and see what satisfaction you will receive. As for instance, pray tell me, can there be any thing more delightful, than to read a lively description, which, as it were, brings before your eyes the following adventure ? a vast lake of boiling pitch, in which an infinite multitude of serpents, snakes, crocodiles, and other sorts of fierce and terrible creatures, are swimming and traversing backwards and forwards, appears to a knight-errant's sight. Then from the midst of the lake a most doleful voice is heard to say these words : O knight, whoever thou art, who gazest on this dreadful lake, if thou wilt purchase the bliss conceal'd under these dismal waters, make known thy valour, by casting thyself into the midst of these black burning surges ; for unless thou dost so, thou art not worthy to behold the mighty wonders enclos'd in the seven castles of the seven fairies, that are seated under these gloomy waves. And

no

no sooner have the last accents of the voice reach'd the knight's ear, but he, without making any further reflection, or considering the danger to which he exposes himself, and even without laying aside his ponderous armour, only recommending himself to heaven and to his lady, plunges headlong into the middle of the burning lake; and when least he imagines it, or can guess where he shall stop, he finds himself on a sudden in the midst of verdant fields, to which the Elysian bear no comparison. There the sky appears to him more transparent, and the sun seems to shine with a redoubl'd brightness. Next he discovers a most delightful grove made up of beautiful shady trees, whose verdure and variety regale his sight, while his ears are ravish'd with the wild, and yet melodious notes of an infinite number of pretty painted birds, that hop and bill and sport themselves on the twining boughs. Here he spies a pleasant rivulet, which, through its flow'ry banks, glides along over the brightest sand, and remurmurs over the whitest pebbles that bedimple its smooth surface, while that other, through its liquid crystal, feasts the eye with a prospect of gold and orient pearl. There he perceives an artificial fountain, form'd of party-colour'd jasper and polish'd marble; and hard by another, contriv'd in grotesque, where the small cockle-shells, plac'd in orderly confusion among the white and yellow shells, and mix'd with pieces of bright crystal and counterfeit emeralds, yield a delectable sight; so that art imitating nature, seems here to out-do her. At a distance, on a sudden, he casts his eyes upon a strong castle, or stately palace, whose walls are of massy gold, the battlements of diamonds, and the gates of hyacinths; in short, its structure is so wonderful, that tho' all the materials are no other than diamonds, carbuncles, rubies, pearls, gold and emeralds, yet the workmanship exceeds them in value. But having seen all this, can any thing be so charming as to behold a numerous train of beautiful damsels come out of the castle in such glorious and costly apparel, as would be endless for me to describe, were I to relate these things as they are to be found in history?



history? Then to see the Beauty that seems the chief of all the damsels, take the bold knight, who cast himself into the burning lake, by the hand, and without speaking one word, lead him into a sumptuous palace, where he is caused to strip as naked as he was born, then put into a delicious bath, and perfum'd with precious essences and odoriferous oils; after which he puts on a fine shirt, deliciously scented; and this done another damsel throws over his shoulders a magnificent robe, worth at least a whole city, if not more. What a sight is it, when in the next place they lead him into another room of state, where he finds the tables so orderly cover'd, that he is surpriz'd and astonish'd? there they pour over his hands, water distill'd from amber and odoriferous flowers: he is seated in an ivory chair; and while all the damsels that attend him observe a profound silence, such variety of dainties is serv'd up, and all so incomparably dress'd, that his appetite is at a stand, doubting on which to satisfy its desire; at the same time his ears are sweetly entertain'd with variety of excellent musick, none perceiving who makes it, or from whence it comes. But above all, what shall we say to see, after the dinner is ended, and tables taken away, the knight left leaning back in his chair, perhaps picking his teeth, as is usual; and then another damsel, much more beautiful than any of the former, comes unexpectedly into the room, and sitting down by the knight, begins to inform him what castle that is, and how she is enchanted in it; with many other particulars, which surprise the knight, and astonish those that read his history. I will enlarge no more upon this matter, since from what has been said, it may sufficiently be infer'd, that the reading of any passage in any history of knight-errantry, must be very delightful and surprizing to the reader. And do you, good sir, believe me, and as I said to you before, read these books, which you may find will banish all melancholy, if you are troubl'd with it, and sweeten your disposition if it be harsh. This I can say for myself, that since my being a knight-errant, I am brave, courteous, bountiful, well-bred, generous, civil,

civil  
priso  
ly be  
thro  
fortu  
king  
of m  
fir,  
tho'  
grat  
be d  
fore  
tuni  
proc  
espe  
harm  
give  
him  
enou

S  
fir,  
mat  
earl  
bett  
a se  
I, a  
ren  
wo  
rev  
wel  
the  
an  
hea  
chu  
wil  
star  
I'll  
don  
an  
the

civil, bold, affable, patient, a sufferer of hardships, imprisonment and enchantments: And tho' I have so lately been shut up in a cage, like a madman, I expect, through the valour of my arm, heaven favouring, and fortune not opposing my designs, to be a king of some kingdom in a very few days, that so I may give proofs of my innate gratitude and liberality. For on my word, sir, a poor man is incapable of exerting his liberality, tho' he be naturally never so well inclined. Now that gratitude which only consists in wishes, may be said to be dead, as faith without good works is dead. Therefore it is, I wish fortune would soon offer some opportunity for me to become an emperor, that I might give proofs of my generosity, by advancing my friends, but especially this poor Sancho Panza my squire, who is the harmlessest fellow in the world; and I would willingly give him an earldom, which I have long since promis'd him, but that I fear he has not sense and judgment enough to manage it.

Sancho hearing his master's last words: well, well, sir, said he, never do you trouble your head about that matter; all you have to do is to get me this same earldom, and let me alone to manage it: I can do as my betters have done before me, I can put in a deputy or a servant, that shall take all trouble off my hands, while I, as a great man should, loll at my ease, receive my rents, mind no business, live merrily, and so let the world rub for Sancho. As to the management of your revenue, said the canon, a deputy or steward may do well, friend: but the lord himself is oblig'd to stir in the administration of justice, to which there is not only an honest sincere intention requir'd, but a judicious head also to distinguish nicely, conclude justly, and chuse wisely; for if this be wanting in the principal, all will be wrong in the medium and end. I don't understand your philosophy, quoth Sancho; all I said, and I'll say it again, is, that I wish I had as good an earldom as I could govern; for I have as great a soul as another man, and as great a body as most men: And the first thing I wou'd do in my government, I wou'd have

have no body to controul me, I wou'd be absolute ; and who but I : now, he that's absolute, can do what he likes ; he that can do what he likes, can take his pleasure ; he that can take his pleasure, can be content ; and he that can be content, has no more to desire ; so the matter's over, and come what will come I'm satisfied : if an island, welcome ; if no island, fare it well ; we shall see our selves in no worse a condition, as one blind man said to another. This is no ill reasoning of yours, friend, said the canon, tho' there is much more to be said upon this topick of earldoms, than you imagine. Undoubtedly, said Don Quixote ; but I suit my actions to the example of Amadis de Gaul, who made his squire Gandalin earl of the firm-island ; which is a fair precedent for preferring Sancho to the same dignity to which his merit also lays an unquestionable claim. The canon stood amaz'd at Don Quixote's methodical and orderly madness, in describing the adventure of the Knight of the Lake, and the impresson made on him by the fabulous conceits of the books he had read ; as likewise at Sancho's simplicity in so eagerly contending for his earldom, which made the whole company very good sport.

By this time the canon's servants had brought the provision, and spreading a carpet on the grass under the shady trees, they sat down to dinner ; when presently they heard the tinkling of a little bell among the copses close by them, and immediately afterwards they saw bolt out of the thicket a very pretty she-goat, speckled all over with black, white and brown spots, and a goatherd running after it ; who, in his familiar dialect, call'd to it to stay and return to the fold ; but the fugitive ran towards the company frightened and panting, and stopt close by them, as if it had begg'd their protection. The goatherd overtaking it, caught it by the horns, and in a chiding way, as if the goat understood his resentments, you little wanton nanny, said he, you spotted elf, what has made you trip it so much of late ? what wolf has scar'd you thus, huzzy ? tell me, little fool, what is the matter ? but the cause is plain ; thou

art

art a female, and therefore never can'st be quiet : curse on thy freakish humours, and all theirs whom thou so much resemblest ; turn back, my love, turn back, and tho' thou can'st not be content with thy fold, yet there thou may'st be safe among the rest of thy fellows ; for if thou, that shou'dst guide and direct the flock, lovest wandring thus, what must they do, what will become of them ? The goatherd's talk to his goat was entertaining enough to the company, especially to the canon, who calling to him, pr'ythee, honest fellow, said he, have a little patience, and let your goat take its liberty a while ; for since it is a female, as you say, she will follow her natural inclination the more for your striving to confine it : come then, and take a bit, and a glass of wine with us, you may be better-humour'd after that. He then reach'd him the leg of a cold rabbet, and, ordering him a glass of wine, the goatherd drank it off, and returning thanks, was pacify'd. Gentlemen, said he, I wou'd not have you think me a fool, because I talk so seriously to this senseless animal, for my words bear a mysterious meaning ; I am indeed, as you see, rustical and unpolish'd ; tho' not so ignorant, but that I converse with men, as well as brutes. That is no miracle, said the curate, for I have known the woods breed learned men, and simple sheeppcotts contain philosophers. At least, said the goatherd, they harbour men that have some knowledge of the world : and to make good this truth, if I thought not the offer impertient, or my company troublesome, you shou'd hear an accident which but too well confirms what you have said. For my part, answer'd Don Quixote, I will hear you attentively, because, methinks, your coming has something in it that looks like an adventure of knight-errantry ; and I dare answer, the whole company will not so much bring their parts in question, as to refuse to hear a story so pleasing, surprizing and amusing, as I fancy yours will prove. Then pr'ythee friend begin, for we will all give you our attention. You must excuse me for one, said Sancho,

I must have a word or two in private with this same pasty at yon little brook ; for I design to fill my belly for to morrow and next day ; having often heard my master Don Quixote say, that whenever a knight-errant's squire finds good belly-timber, he must fall to and feed till his sides are ready to burst, because they may happen to be bewilder'd in a thick wood for five or six days together ; so that if a man has not his belly full beforehand, or his wallet well provided, he may chance to be crows-meat himself as many times it falls out. You're in the right, Sancho, said the knight ; but I have, for my part, satisfy'd my bodily appetite, and now want only refreshment for my mind, which I hope this honest fellow's story will afford me. All the company agreed with Don Quixote : the goatherd then stroaking his pretty goat once or twice ; lie down thou speckl'd fool, said he, lie by me here ; for we shall have time enough to return home. The creature seem'd to understand him, for as soon as her master sat down, she stretch'd herself quietly by his side, and look'd up in his face as if she wou'd let him know that she minded what he said ; and then he began thus.



## CHAP. XXIV.

### *The goatherd's tale.*

**A**BOUT three leagues from this valley, there is a village, which, though small, yet is one of the richest hereabouts. In it there liv'd a farmer in very great esteem ; and tho' it's common for the rich to be respected, yet was this person more consider'd for his virtue, than for the wealth he possess'd. But what he accounted himself happiest in, was a daughter of such extraordinary beauty, prudence, wit and virtue, that



that all who knew or beheld her, cou'd not but admire to see how heaven and nature had done their utmost to embellish her. When she was but little she was handsome, till at the age of sixteen she was most compleatly beautiful. The fame of her beauty began to extend to the neighbouring villages; but why say I neighbouring villages? it extended to the remotest cities, and enter'd the palaces of kings, and the ears of all manner of persons, who from all parts flock'd to see her, as something rare, or as a sort of prodigy. Her father was strictly careful of her, nor was she less careful of herself; for there are no guards, bolts or locks which preserve a young woman like her own care and caution——The father's riches and the daughter's beauty, drew a great many, as well strangers as inhabitants of that country, to sue for her in marriage; but such was the vast number of the pretenders, as did but the more confound and divide the old man in his choice, upon whom to bestow so valuable a treasure. Among the crowd of her admirers, was I; having good reason to hope for success, from the knowledge her father had of me, being a native of the same place, of a good family, and in the flower of my years, of a considerable estate, and not to be despis'd for my understanding. With the very same advantages, there was another person of our village who made court to her at the same time. This put the father to a stand, and held him in suspense, till his daughter should declare in favour of one of us: to bring this affair therefore to the speedier issue, he resolv'd to acquaint Leandra, for so was this fair-one call'd, that since we were equals in all things, he left her entirely free to chuse which of us was most agreeable to herself. An example worthy of being imitated by all parents, who have any regard for their children. I don't mean that they should be allow'd to chuse in things mean or mischievous; but only that proposing to 'em ever those things which are good, they should be allow'd in them to gratify their inclination. I

don't know how Leandra approv'd this propos'd; this I only know, that her father put us both off, with the excuse of his daughter's being too young to be yet dispos'd of; and that he treated us both in such general terms, as could neither well please nor displease us ——— my rival's name is Anselmo, mine Eugenio, for 'tis necessary you shou'd know the names of the persons concern'd in this tragedy, the conclusion of which, tho' depending yet, may easily be perceiv'd likely to be unfortunate. About that time there came to our village one Vincent de la Rosa, the son of a poor labouring man of the neighbourhood. This Vincent came out of Italy, having been a soldier there, and in other foreign parts. When he was but twelve years old, a captain, that happen'd to pass by here, with his company, took him out of this country, and at the end of other twelve years he return'd hither, habited like a soldier, all gay and glorious, in a thousand various colours, bedeck'd with a thousand toys of crystal, and chains of steel. To day he put on one piece of finery, to morrow another; but all false, counterfeit and worthless. The country people, who by nature are malicious, and who living in idleness are still more inclin'd to malice, observ'd this presently, and counting all his fine things, they found that indeed he had but three suits of cloaths, which were of a very different colour with the stockings and garters belonging to 'em; yet did he manage 'em with so many tricks and inventions, that if one had not counted 'em, one wou'd have sworn he had above ten suits, and above twenty plumes of feathers. ———

Let it not seem impertinent that I mention this particular of his cloaths and trinkets, since so much of the story depends upon it. Seating himself upon a bench, under a large spreading poplar-tree, which grows in our street, he us'd to entertain us with his exploits, while we stood gaping and listening at the wonders he recounted: there was not that country, as he said, upon the face of the earth, which he had not seen, nor battle which he had not been en-

gag'd

gag'd in; he had kill'd more Moors, for his own share, than were in Morocco and Tunis together; and had fought more duels than Gante, Luna, Diego, Garcia de Peredez \*, or a thousand others that he nam'd, yet in all of 'em had the better, and never got a scratch, or lost a drop of blood. Then again he pretended to shew us the scars of wounds he had receiv'd, which tho' they were not to be perceiv'd, yet he gave us to understand they were so many musket-shots, which he had got in several skirmishes and rencounters. In short, he treated all his equals with an unparallel'd arrogance; and even to those who knew the meanness of his birth, he did not stick to affirm, that his own arm was his father, his actions were his pedigree, and that except as to his being a soldier, he ow'd no part of his quality to the king himself, and that in being a soldier, he was as good as the king.

Besides these assum'd accomplishments, he was a piece of a musician, and cou'd thrum a guittar a little, but what his excellency chiefly lay in was poetry; and so fond was he of shewing his parts that way, that upon every trifling occasion, he was sure to make a copy of verses a league and a half long. This soldier whom I have describ'd, this Vincent de la Rosa, this hero, this gallant, this musician, this poet, was often seen and view'd by Leandra, from a window of her house which look'd into the street; she was struck with the tinsel of his dress; she was charm'd with his verses, of which he took care to disperse a great many copies; her ears were pleas'd with the exploits he related of himself; and in short, as the devil wou'd have it, she fell in love with him, before ever he had the confidence to make his addresses to her: and, as in all affairs of love, that is the most easily manag'd, where, the lady's affection is pre-engag'd; so was it here no hard thing for Leandra and

---

\* Spaniards famous for duelling.

Vincent to have frequent meetings to concert their matters; and before ever any one of her many suitors had the least suspicion of her inclination, she had gratify'd it; and leaving her father's house (for she had no mother) had run away with this soldier, who came off with greater triumph in this enterprize, than in any of the rest he made his boasts of. The whole village was surpris'd at this accident, as was every one that heard it. I was amaz'd, Anselmo distracted, her father in tears, her relations outrageous; justice is demanded; a party with officers is sent out, who traverse the roads, search every wood, and, at three days end, find the poor fond Leandra in a cave of one of the mountains, naked to her shift, and robb'd of a great deal of money and jewels which she took from home. They bring and present her to her father; upon enquiry made into the cause of her misfortune, she confess'd ingenuously, that Vincent de la Rosa had deceiv'd her, and upon promise of marriage had prevail'd with her to leave her father's house, with the assurance of carrying her to the richest and most delicious city of the world, which was Naples; that she foolishly had given credit to him, and robbing her father, had put herself into his hands the first night she was mist: that he carry'd her up a steep wild craggy mountain, and put her in that cave where she was found. In fine, she said, that tho' he had rifl'd her of all she had, yet he had never attempted her honour; but leaving her in that manner he fled. It was no easy matter to make any of us entertain a good opinion of the soldier's continence; but she affirm'd it with so many repeated asseverations, that in some measure it serv'd to comfort her father in his affliction, who valu'd nothing so much as his daughter's reputation. The very same day that Leandra appear'd again, she also disappear'd from us, for her father immediately clapp'd her up in a monastery, in a town not far off, in hopes that time might wear away something of her disgrace. Those who were not interested in Leandra, excus'd her upon the account

count of her youth. But those who were acquainted with her wit and sense, did not attribute her miscarriage to her ignorance, but to the levity and vanity of mind, natural to woman-kind. Since the confinement of Leandra, Anselmo's eyes could never meet with an object which cou'd give him either ease or pleasure; I too cou'd find nothing but what look'd sad and gloomy to me in the absence of Leandra. Our melancholy increas'd, as our patience decreas'd: We curst a thousand times the soldier's finery and trinkets, and rail'd at the father's want of precaution: at last we agreed, Anselmo and I, to leave the village, and to retire to this valley, where, he feeding a large flock of sheep, and I as large a herd of goats, all our own, we pass our time under the trees, giving vent to our passions, singing in consort the praises or reproaches of the beauteous Leandra, or else sighing alone, make our complaints to heaven on our misfortune. In imitation of us, a great many more of Leandra's lovers have come hither into these steep and craggy mountains, and are alike employ'd; and so many there are of them, that the place seems to be turn'd to the old Arcadia we read of. On the the top of that hill there is such a number of shepherds and their cottages, that there is no part of it in which is not to be heard the name of Leandra. This man curses and calls her wanton and lascivious, another calls her light and fickle; one acquits and forgives her, another arraigns and condemns her; one celebrates her beauty, another rails at her ill qualities; in short, all blame, but all adore her: nay, so far does this extravagance prevail, that here are those who complain of her disdain who never spoke to her; and others who are jealous of favours which she never granted to any; for as I intimated before, her inclination was not known before her disgrace. There is not a hollow place of a rock, a bank of a brook, or a shady grove, where there is not some or other of these amorous shepherds telling their doleful stories to the air and winds, Echo has learnt to repeat



peat the name of Leandra, Leandra all the hills resound, the brooks murmur Leandra, and 'tis Leandra that holds us all enchanted, hoping without hope, and fearing without knowing what we fear. Of all these foolish people, the person who shews the least, and yet has the most sense, is my rival Anselmo, who forgetting all other causes of complaint, complains only of her absence; and to his lute, which he touches to admiration, he joins his voice in verses of his own composing, which declare the greatness of his genius. For my part, I take another course, I think a better, I'm sure an easier, which is to say all the ill things I can of women's levity, inconstancy, their broken vows and vain deceitful promises, their fondness of show and disregard of merit. This, gentlemen, was the occasion of those words, which, at my coming hither, I address to this goat; for being a she, I hate her, tho' she is the best of my herd. This is the story which I promis'd to tell you; if you have thought it too long, I shall endeavour to requite your patience in any thing I can serve you. Hard by is my cottage, where I have some good fresh milk and excellent cheese, with several sorts of fruits, which I hope you will find agreeable both to the sight and taste.



### C H A P. XXV.

*Of the combat between Don Quixote and the goatherd : with the rare adventure of the penitents, which the knight happily accomplish'd with the sweat of his brows.*

THE goatherd's story was mightily lik'd by the whole company, especially by the canon, who particularly minded the manner of his relating it, that had more of a scholar and gentleman, than of a rude goat.

goatherd; which made him conclude the curate had reason to say, that even the mountains bred scholars and men of sense. They all made large proffers of their friendship and service to Eugenio, but Don Quixote exceeded 'em all, and addressing himself to him: were I, said he, at this time in a capacity of undertaking any adventure, I wou'd certainly begin from this very moment to serve you, I wou'd soon release Leandra out of the nunnery, where undoubtedly she is detain'd against her will; and in spite of all the opposition cou'd be made by the lady abbess and all her adherents I wou'd return her to your hands, that you might have the sole disposal of her, so far, I mean, as is consistent with the laws of knighthood, which expressly forbid that any man shou'd offer the least violence to a damsel; yet (I trust in heaven) that the power of a friendly magician will prevail against the force of a malicious inchanter; and whenever this shall happen, you may assure yourself of my favour and assistance, to which I am oblig'd by my profession, that enjoins me to relieve the oppressed.

The goat-herd, who till then had not taken the least notice of Don Quixote in particular, now looking earnestly on him, and finding his dismal countenance and wretched habit were no great encouragement for him to expect a performance of such mighty matters, whisper'd the barber who sat next him: pray, sir, said he, who is this man that talks so extravagantly? For I protest I never saw so strange a figure in all my life. Whom can you imagine it shou'd be reply'd the barber, but the famous Don Quixote de la Mancha, the establisher of justice, the avenger of injuries, the protector of damsels, the terror of giants, and the invincible gainer of battles. The account you give of this person, return'd the goatherd, is much like what we read in romances and books of chivalry of those doughty dons, who, for their mighty prowess and achievements, were call'd knights-errant; and therefore I dare say you do but jest, and that this gentleman's brains have deserted their quarters.

Thou

Thou art an impudent insolent varlet, cry'd Don Quixote, 'tis thy paper-scull is full of empty rooms; I have more brains than the prostitute thy mother had about her when she carry'd thy lump of nonsense in her womb. With that, snatching up a loaf that was near him, he struck the goatherd so furious a blow with it, that he almost level'd his nose with his face. T'other, not accusom'd to such salutations, no sooner perceiv'd how scurvily he was treated, but without any respect to the table-cloth, napkins, or to those who were eating, he leap'd furiously on Don Quixote, and grasping him by the throat with both his hands, had certainly strangl'd him, had not Sancho Panza come in that very nick of time, and griping him fast behind, pull'd him backwards on the table, bruising dishes, breaking glasses, spilling and overturning all that lay upon it. Don Quixote seeing himself freed, fell violently again upon the goatherd, who, all besmear'd with blood, and tramp'd to pieces under Sancho's feet, grop'd here and there for some knife or fork to take a fatal revenge; but the canon and curate took care to prevent his purpose, and in the mean while, by the barber's contrivance, the goatherd got Don Quixote under him, on whom he let fall such a tempest of blows, as caus'd as great a shower of blood to pour from the poor knight's face as had stream'd from his own. The canon and curate were ready to burst with laughing, the officers danc'd and jump'd at the sport, every one cry'd hallow! as men use to do when two dogs are snarling or fighting; Sancho Panza alone was vex'd, fretted himself to death, and rav'd like a madman because he cou'd not get from one of the canon's serving-men, who kept him from assisting his master. In short, all were exceedingly merry, except the bloody combatants, who had maul'd one another most miserably, when on a sudden they heard the sound of a trumpet so doleful, that it made 'em turn to listen towards that part from whence it seem'd to come: but he who was most troubl'd at this dismal alarm, was Don Quixote; therefore, tho' he lay under the goatherd, full fore against his will, and  
was

was most lamentably bruised and battered, friend devil, cry'd he to him (for sure nothing less could have so much valour and strength as to subdue my forces) let us have a cessation of arms but for a single hour; for the dolorous sound of that trumpet strikes my soul with more horror, than thy hard fists do my ears with pain, and methinks excite me to some new adventure. With that the goatherd, who was as weary of beating, as of being beaten, immediately gave him a truce; and the knight once more getting on his feet, directed his then not hasty steps to the place whence the mournful sound seem'd to come, and presently saw a number of men all in white, like penitents, descending from a rising ground. The real matter was this: the people had wanted rain for a whole year together, wherefore they appointed rogations, processions and disciplines throughout all that country, to implore heaven to open its treasury, and show'r down plenty upon 'em; and to this end, the inhabitants of a village near that place came in procession to a devout hermitage built on one of the hills which surrounded that valley.

Don Quixote taking notice of the strange habit of the penitents, and never reminding himself that he had often seen the like before, fancy'd immediately it was some new adventure, and he alone was to engage in it, as he was oblig'd by the laws of knight-errantry; and that which the more increas'd his frenzy, was his mistaking an image which they carry'd (all cover'd with black) for some great lady, whom these miscreant and discourteous knights, he thought were carrying away against her will. As soon as this whimsy took him in the head, he mov'd with what expedition he could towards Rozinante, who was feeding up and down upon the plains, and whipping off his bridle from the pommel, and his target which hung hard by, he bridl'd him in an instant; then taking his sword from Sancho, he got in a trice on Rozinante's back; where bracing his target, and addressing himself aloud to all there present, O valourous company, cry'd he, you shall now perceive of how great importance it is to mankind, that such illustrious.

ous persons as those who profess the order of knight-errantry shou'd exist in the world; now, I say, you shall see by my freeing that noble lady, who is there basely and barbarously carry'd away captive, that knight adventurers ought to be held in the highest and greatest estimation. So saying, he punch'd Rozinante with his heels for want of spurs; and forcing him to a hand-gallop (for 'twas never read in any part of this true history that Rozinante did ever run full-speed) he posted to encounter the penitents, in spite of all the curate, canon and barber cou'd do to hinder him; much less cou'd Sancho Panza's outcries detain him. Master! sir! Don Quixote! baul'd out the poor squire, whither are you posting? are you bewitch'd? does the devil drive and set you on, thus to run against the church? ah wretch that I am!—See, sir? that is a procession of penitents, and the lady they carry is the image of the immaculate virgin, our blessed lady. Take heed what you do, for at this time it may be certainly said you are out of your wits.—But Sancho might as well have kept his breath for another use, for the knight was urg'd with so vehement a desire to encounter the white men, and release the mourning lady, that he heard not a syllable he said, or if he had he wou'd not have turn'd back, even at the king's exprefs command. At last being come near the procession, and stopping Rozinante, that already had a great desire to rest a little, in a dismal tone, and with a hoarse voice, ho! cry'd he, you there, who cover your faces, perhaps because you are asham'd of yourselves, and of the crime you are now committing, give heed and attention to what I have to say!—the first who stopp'd at this alarm, were those who carry'd the image; when one of the four priests that sung the litanies, seeing the strange figure that Don Quixote made, and the leanness of Rozinante, with other circumstances which he observ'd in the knight sufficient to have forc'd laughter, presently made him this answer; good sir! if you have any thing to say to us speak it quickly; for these poor men whom you see are very much tir'd, therefore we neither can, nor is it reasonable we shou'd stand



stand thus in pain to hear any thing that can't be deliver'd in two words. I will say it in one, reply'd Don Quixote, which is this ; I charge you immediately to release that beautiful lady, whose tears and looks full of sorrow evidently shew you carry her away by violence, and have done her some unheard of injury. This do, or I, who was born to punish such outrages, will not suffer you to advance one step with her, till she is entirely possess'd of that liberty she so earnestly desires, and so justly deserves. This last speech made 'em all conclude that the knight was certainly distracted, and caus'd a general laughter : but this prov'd like oil to fire, and so inflam'd Don Quixote, that laying his hand on his sword, without more words, he presently assaulted those who carry'd the image. At the same time one of them quitting his post, came to encounter our hero with a wooden fork, on which he supported the bier whenever they made a stand, and warding with it a weighty blow which Don Quixote design'd and aim'd at him, the fork was cut in two ; but the other who had the remaining piece in his hand, return'd the knight such a thwack on his left shoulder, that his target not being able to resist such rustick force, the poor unfortunate Don Quixote was struck to the ground and miserably bruise'd.

Sancho Panza, who had follow'd him as fast as his breath and legs wou'd permit, seeing him fall, cry'd out to his adversary to forbear striking him, urging that he was a poor enchanted knight, and one who in his whole life had never done any man harm. But 'twas not Sancho's arguments that held the country fellow's hands, the only motive was, that he fear'd he had kill'd him, since he cou'd not perceive he stir'd either hand or foot ; wherefore tucking his coat up to his girdle, with all possible expedition, he scour'd over the fields like a greyhound. Mean while Don Quixote's companions hasten'd to the place where he lay, when those of the procession, seeing them come running towards them, attended by the officers of the holy brotherhood with their cross-bows along with them,

began to have apprehensions of some disaster from the approaching party, wherefore drawing up in a body about the image, the disciplinants lifting up their hoods, and grasping fast their whips, as the priest did their tapers, they expected the assault with the greatest bravery, resolving to defend themselves and offend their enemy as long and as much as possible: but providence had order'd the matter much better that they cou'd hope; for while Sancho, who had thrown himself on his master's body, was lamenting his loss, and the suppos'd death of so noble and generous a lord, in the most ridiculous manner that e'er was heard, the curate of the knight's party was come up with the other who came in the procession, and was immediately known by him, so that their acquaintance put an end to the fears which both sides were in of an engagement. Don Quixote's curate in few words acquainted the other with the knight's circumstances; whereupon he and the whole squadron of penitents went over to see whether the unfortunate knight were living or dead, and heard Sancho Panza with tears in his eyes bewailing over his master; O flower of knighthood, cry'd he, that with one single perilous knock art come to an untimely end! Thou honour of thy family, and glory of all La Mancha! nay, and of the whole var-sal world beside; which, now it has lost thee, will be over-run by miscreants and outlaws, who will no longer be afraid to be maul'd for their misdeeds. O bountiful above all the Alexanders in the world! thou who hast rewarded me but for poor eight months service with the best island that is wash'd by salt water! Thou who wert humble to the proud, and haughty to the humble! Thou who durst undertake perils, and patiently endure affronts! Thou who wert in love, no body knows why! True pattern of good men, and scourge of the wicked, sworn foe to all reprobates! and to say all at once that man can say, thou knight-errant!

The woful accents of the squire's voice at last recall'd Don Quixote to himself; when after a deep sigh,

fight, the first thing he thought of was his absent Dulcinea. O charming Dulcinea, cry'd he, the wretch that lingers banish'd from thy sight, endures far greater miseries than this! And then looking on his faithful squire, good Sancho, said he, help me once more into the enchanted carr: for I am not in a condition to press the back of Rozinante: this shoulder is all broke to pieces. With all my heart, my good lord, reply'd Sancho, and pray let me advise you to go back to our village with these gentlemen who are your special friends. At home we may think of some other journey that may be more profitable and honourable than this. With reason hast thou spoken, Sancho, reply'd Don Quixote: it will become our wisdom to be unactive, till the malevolent aspects of the planets, which now reign, be over. This grave resolution was highly commended by the canon, curate, and barber, who had been sufficiently diverted by Sancho Panza's ridiculous lamentation. Don Quixote was plac'd in the waggon as before; the processioners recover'd their former order, and pass'd on about their business. The goatherd took his leave of the whole company. The curate satisfy'd the officers for their attendance, since they would stir no farther. The canon desir'd the curate to send him an account of Don Quixote's condition from that time forward, having a mind to know whether his frenzy abated or increas'd; and then took his leave, to continue his journey. Thus the curate, the barber, Don Quixote, and Sancho Panza were left together; as also the good Rozinante, that bore all these passages as patiently as his master. The waggoner then yolk'd his oxen, and having set Don Quixote on a truss of hay, jogg'd on after his slow accusom'd pace that way the curate had directed. In six days time they reach'd the knight's village. 'Twas about noon when they enter'd the town; and as it happen'd to be on a Sunday, all the people were in the market-place, thro' the middle of which Don Quixote's carr must of necessity pass. Every body was curious to know what was in it; and the people

ple were strangely surpriz'd when they saw and knew their townsman. While they were gaping and wondring, a little boy ran to the knight's house, and gave intelligence to the house-keeper and niece, that their master and uncle was return'd, and very lean, pale and frightful as a ghost, stretch'd out at length on a bundle of hay, in a waggon, and drawn along by a team of oxen

'Twas a piteous thing to hear the wailings of those two poor creatures; the thumps too which which they gave their faces, with the curses and execrations they thunder'd out against all books of chivalry, were almost as numerous as their sighs and tears: but the height of their lamenting was when Don Quixote enter'd the door. Upon the noise of his arrival Sancho Panza's wife made haste thither to enquire after her good man, who, she was inform'd, went a squiring with the knight. As soon as ever she set eyes on him, the question she ask'd him was this: is the ass in health, or no? Sancho answer'd, he was come back in better health than his master. Well, said she, heaven be prais'd for the good news. But hark you, my friend, continu'd she, what have you got by this new squireship? Have you brought me home e'er a gown or petticoat, or shoes for my children? In troth, sweet wife, reply'd Sancho, I have brought thee none of those things; I am loaded with better things. Ay, said his wife, that's well. Pr'ythee let me see some of them fine things; for I vow I've a hugeous mind to see 'em; the sight of 'em will comfort my poor heart, which has been like to burst with sorrow and grief ever since thou went'st away. I'll shew 'em thee when we come home, return'd Sancho; in the mean time rest satisfy'd; for if heaven see good that we shou'd once again go abroad in search of other adventures, within a little time after, at my return, thou shalt find me some earl, or the governor of some island; ay, of one of the very best in the whole world. I wish with all my heart this may come to pass, reply'd the good wife; for, by my troth husband, we  
want

want it sorely. But what do you mean by that same word island? For believe me I don't understand it. All in good time wife, said Sancho; honey is not made for an ass's mouth: I'll tell thee what 'tis hereafter. Thou wilt be amaz'd to hear all thy servants and vassals ne'er speak a word to thee without, an't please you madam, an't like your ladyship, and your honour. What dost thou mean, Sancho, by ladyship, islands and vassals, quoth Joan Panza, for so she was call'd, tho' her husband and she were nothing a-kin, only 'tis a custom in La Mancha that the wives are there call'd by their husbands sir-names. Pr'ythee Joan, said Sancho, don't trouble thy head to know these matters all at once, and in a heap, as a body may say: 'tis enough I tell thee the truth, therefore hold thy tongue\*. Yet, by the way, one thing I will assure thee, that nothing in the varshal world is better for an honest man, than to be squire to a knight-errant while he's hunting of adventures. 'Tis true, most adventures he goes about do not answer a man's expectation so much as he cou'd wish; for of a hundred that are met with, ninety-nine are wont to be crabbed and unlucky ones. This I know to my cost: I myself have got well kick'd and toss'd in some of 'em, and soundly drubb'd and belaboured in others; yet, for all that, 'tis rare sport to be a watching for strange chances, to cross forests, to search and beat up and down in woods, to scramble over rocks, to visit castles, and to take up quarters in an inn at pleasure, and all the while the devil a cross to pay.

These were the discourses with which Sancho Panza and his wife Joan entertained one another, while the house-keeper and niece undrest Don Quixote and put him into his bed; where he lay looking asquint on 'em, but could not imagine where he was. The curate charg'd the niece to be very careful and tender of her uncle, and to be very watchful, lest he shou'd

Z 3

make

---

\* Cose la boca. i. e. sew up thy mouth.



make another sally; telling her the trouble and charge he had been at to get him home. Here the women began their out-cries again: here the books of knight-errantry were again execrated and damn'd to the bottomless pit. Here they begg'd those cursed bewitching chimeras and lies might be thrown down into the very centre, to the hellish father of 'em: for, they were still almost distracted with the fear of losing their master and uncle again, so soon as ever he recover'd; which indeed fell out according to their fear. But tho' the author of this history has been very curious and diligent in his inquiry after Don Quixote's achievements in his third expedition in quest of adventures, yet he cou'd never learn a perfect account of 'em, at least from any author of credit: fame and tradition alone have preserv'd some particulars of 'em in the memoirs and antiquities of La Mancha; as, that after the knight's third sally, he was present at certain famous tilts and tournaments made in the city of Saragosa, where he met with occasions worthy the exercise of his sense and valour: but how the knight dy'd, our author neither cou'd nor ever shou'd have learn'd, if by good fortune he had not met with an antient physician, who had a leaden box in his possession, which, as he averr'd, was found in the ruins of an old hermitage, as it was rebuilding. In this box were certain scrolls of parchment written in Gothic characters, but containing verses in the Spanish tongue, in which many of his noble acts were sung, and Dulcinea del Toboso's beauty celebrated, Rozinante's figure describ'd, and Sancho Panza's fidelity applauded. They likewise gave an account of Don Quixote's Sepulchre, with several epitaphs and encomiums on his life and conversation. Those that could be thoroughly read and transcrib'd, are here added by the faithful author of this new and incomparable history; desiring no other recompence or reward of the readers, for all his labour and pains, in searching all the numerous and old records of La Mancha to perfect this matchless piece, but that they will be pleas'd to give it as much credit

credit as judicious men use to give to books of knight-errantry, which are now a-days so generally taking. This is the utmost of his ambition, and will be sufficient satisfaction for him, and likewise encourage him to furnish 'em with other matter of entertainment; which, tho' possibly not altogether so true as this, yet it may be as well contriv'd and diverting. The first words in the parchment found in the leaden box are these.

*Monicongo, Academick of Argamasilla, on Don Quixote's Monument.*

E P I T A P H.

“ **H**ERE lies a doughty knight,  
“ Who, bruis'd, and ill in plight,  
“ Jogg'd over many a track  
“ On Rozinante's back.  
“ Close by him Sancho's laid;  
“ Whereat let none admire:  
“ He was a clown, 'tis said,  
“ But ne'er the worse a squire.

*Paniaguado, Academick of Argamasilla, on Dulcinea del Toboso's Monument.*

E P I T A P H.

“ **H**ERE DULCINEA lies,  
“ Once brawny, plump and lusty;  
“ But now to death a prize,  
“ And somewhat lean and musty.  
“ For her the country-fry,  
“ Like Quixote, long stood steady.  
“ Well might she carry't high;  
“ Far less has made a lady.

There

These were the verses that could be read: as for the rest, the characters being defac'd, and almost eaten away, they were deliver'd to a university student, in order that he might give us his conjectures concerning their meaning. And we are inform'd, that after many lucubrations, and much pains, he has effected the work, and intends to oblige the world with it, giving us at the same time some hopes of Don Quixote's third sally.

*Per si altro cantera con miglior plectro.*

*The End of the first Part, and of the Second Volume.*



